

T H E  
L I F E  
And entertaining  
ADVENTURES  
O F  
Mr. CLEVELAND,  
Natural SON of  
OLIVER CROMWELL,  
Written by HIMSELF.

Giving a particular Account of his Unhappiness in Love, Marriage, Friendship, &c. and his great Sufferings in *Europe* and *America*.

Intermixed with Reflections, describing the Heart of Man in all its Variety of Passions and Disguises; also some curious Particulars of *Oliver's* History and Amours, never before made publick.

---

V O L. III.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for T. ASTLEY, at the *Rose* in St. Paul's Church-Yard. 1734.



THE  
LIFE

ADVENTURES  
OF  
MR. CLEVELAND

NATURAL SON OF  
OLIVER CROMWELL

Written by HIMSELF

Giving a graphic Account of his Life  
beginning in 1629, and ending in  
1676, and his great adventures in  
Europe and America

Intermingled with Reflections, and the History  
of Man in all the various of his Condition  
and State: also some curious and rare  
Lithography and Anatomy, never before published

VOL. I.

LONDON:  
Printed by J. Sturges, at the Sign of the  
Crown, in St. Dunstons Church-yard, 1711.



THE  
L I F E  
OF  
Mr. CLEVELAND,  
NATURAL SON  
OF  
*Oliver Cromwell.*

---

BOOK IV.

---



HO' the continual presence of my afflictions, suffer'd me to have but very little relish for joy; yet the good fortune I had to meet again with so amiable a brother; his story, his endearing caresses, and the expectation of seeing *Gelin* and *Johnson*, whom I represented to my self under a most amiable image; suspended my anxiety for some moments. They came in; when desirous of shewing my brother that I already entertain'd the most

favourable opinion of them; I ran to, and embraced them with such an air of kindness and candor, as very much astonish'd them. They gaz'd upon my brother *Bridge* in the utmost astonishment, when he cried with an air of tenderness, don't be surpriz'd; this prisoner is my brother. I have already acquainted him with our misfortunes, and he'll join with me in acknowledgments, for the great obligations by which you have bound me. I was obliged to acquaint them with my whole story, in as few words as possible; after which they embrac'd me in the most friendly manner. *Gelin* discover'd in his eyes and his gestures, all the sprightliness and vivacity, for which my brother told me he was distinguish'd; so that I should have discover'd who he was, had he not been pointed out to me. He was in an instant almost as familiar with me, as if I had been the only companion he had ever spent his life with. He had an easy behaviour, and a winning aspect. *Johnson* appear'd to be of a more timid and reserv'd character; he spoke little; but through this reservedness one might discover a judicious turn of mind, and the highest appearance of good nature. Tho', says I to my brother, you are unfortunate

in

in love, you are very happy in friendship. Your affliction is great, and so is your consolation: but as for me, my torments are extreme, and I cannot discover the least remedy, nor even the least prospect of their ever being soften'd.

HE answer'd, that he was not yet sufficiently acquainted with my troubles, to propose an expedient which might remove them; but that in case I thought friendship could contribute to soften them, I should hereafter enjoy that consolation no less than himself. His companions also said a thousand obliging things, and assured me, that I might rely on their service and affection. I consider'd that they might be useful to me; but then the service I might expect from them was of such a nature as I could scarcely ask. In the first place I should have requir'd them, (how rash soever this might be, considering the craziness of their vessel, and the inequality with regard to numbers) to have join'd with me, in attempting to rescue Mrs. *Lallin* out of the hands of that perfidious wretch *Wills*: The unhappy fate of that lady having affected me so strongly, that I would willingly have shed some blood, to restore her to her liberty. In case this favour was refused, which indeed

I cou'd not reasonably press them to indulge me; I cou'd have wish'd they wou'd have carried me to *Jamaica*; in order that I might there make my complaints to the governour against *Wills*, and sue for justice at his hands. In fine, as this second expedient was also dangerous; since as *Wills* had been let into all my designs, he would infallibly have prejudiced the governour against me; I could have wish'd, at least, that they would convey me to *Martinico*, where I hoped to find the lord *Axminster*; and I flatter'd my self that they would assist that nobleman and my self; first in rescuing Mrs. *Lal-  
lin*, and afterwards in farthering the execution of the king's orders: These were the only services which could any way mitigate my anxiety.

BUT what likelihood was there that these would be indulged me; or that I could even so much as propose them? My brother and his friends were oppress'd with their own misfortunes, which they thought required as speedy a remedy as mine. They stood in as much need of assistance and consolation as my self; and they possibly might expect that favour from me, which I was going to sue for from them. However, I resolv'd to sound them

them soon, and give them some little idea of what I desir'd; though it were only to take from them all hopes, of my ever being prevail'd upon to accompany them for any considerable time. I acquainted them with the reasons why I left *France*; how I was prompted, both from love and honour, to follow the lord *Axminster*; the obligations I had to Mrs. *Lallin*, which were so great, that they claim'd immediate succour from me; and lastly, the fixed resolution I had taken to sail for the *West-Indies* the very first opportunity. 'Tis, says I, a most melancholy circumstance, that the inexpressible satisfaction I taste in seeing you, should be torn from me, almost as soon as I am blest with it; but I must yield to the most binding, the most sacred of all engagements. Compare my miserable state with yours. You pant to see your wives, on whose love you may depend; are under no apprehensions upon their account; and are afflicted only for their absence: so that nothing is wanting to complete your happiness, but a propitious gale of wind, which may waft you to their island. You say that 'twill be very easy for you, either to carry them off in the night, or to force them away in open day; there are no



obstacles to fill you with dread ; the only circumstance necessary for you, is a little patience ; since you will, at last, certainly discover what you are seeking after. Thrice happy lovers ! Of what then can you accuse either love or fortune ? I only have reason to complain. I seek my dear wife, alas ! I call her by a tender name, which does not yet belong to her. Were I but certain that she would one day be mine ! I seek after her, and yet am certain that she'll be enrag'd in case I ever happen to meet with her ; and know not whether my just reasons will have the power to soften her resentments. Her father abhors and despises me ; death would be less insupportable, than his aversion and contempt. How shall I do to get to the place where he is, and recover his esteem ? Heaven had favour'd me with an expedient, in the person of that generous lady who accompanied me in the voyage ; but I lost the assistance she afforded me, by an unparallel'd act of treachery : I perhaps may justly reproach myself with the sad fate to which she was exposed, partly out of tenderness and affection for me. I am an ingrate, a worthless wretch, if I let slip one moment which may be indulg'd me to favour her ; and  
prefer

prefer any thing in life to so just a debt— Consider, therefore, how great must be my anguish, and the tumults which must rage in my bosom! On one side, I am doubly call'd upon by love; honour and gratitude; and on the other, by a fraternal tenderness; for oh! I can never leave you but with the utmost regret.

My brother answer'd, that he was persuaded I was no less tortur'd than himself; and therefore was very sorry it was not in his power to administer some consolation. I was sorry he did not better understand the drift of my discourse. Possibly I should never have been able to express my self more clearly, had not *Gelin* given me an opportunity of doing it, by proposing to me to accompany them in the search after their island. I can't think, says he, that our endeavours will always be vain; and I look upon our meeting you as a happy omen. Possibly the instant is at hand, when we shall find what we are in search of: Now if we should enjoy that happiness so soon as I hope we shall, I then will freely consent to put out to sea with you, and assist you in all your undertakings. My brother and *Johnson* assured me they would be ready to join with him; and added moreover that their

wives should go along with them; after which we might either settle together in some of our colonies, or all return back to *Europe*.

I CAST my eyes downwards in silence, and was revolving this proposal in my mind, when my brother perceiv'd that I did not approve of it, and ask'd me the reason of it. I told him very naturally, that it was impossible for me to acquiesce with it. But, answer'd he, interrupting me; where do you flatter yourself with the hopes of being able to find out a vessel to convey you to the *West-Indies*? I answer'd, dear brother, I won't conceal my hopes from you, they are grounded on your generous friendship, and that of your companions. Tho' you were to suspend the going in search after your wives for some months, it cannot be of the least prejudice to either of you. They love you; love will keep them dutiful; and they'll for ever continue inviolably yours. I conjure you to set aside your search for some days, and first carry me to *Martinico*. Hold! says I, raising my voice, purposely to check the first emotions, which might have prompted them to refuse my request; hold, my dear friends, and don't refuse attending to my reasons.

reasons. Dear brother, and Mr. *Johnson*; you both are natives of *England*, and are hearty well-wishers to king *Charles* our lawful sovereign; consider only the honour you may acquire, and the recompence you may justly expect, in case you assist the lord *Axminster* in promoting his majesty's interest. That nobleman wants the assistance of persons of your resolution; courage will avail more than numbers; in the *West-Indies*, twenty brave men are alone an army. Thus may you do our king and country the utmost service, without exposing your selves to any great danger; for the abovemention'd nobleman is beloved in our colonies; he need but appear, and he will immediately be obey'd, and all you have to do, will be only to accompany him. The moment he is acknowledged in the character with which he is invested, leave will be allow'd you to return to your enterprize, with such succour as may secure success; and then I my self promise to accompany you in it. Consider, that what I now offer, is equally advantageous and easy. *Gelin* indeed is not an *Englishman*, but then he boasts a generous mind; and at the same time that he engages in so glorious an attempt, he will likewise raise his fortune, in which his spouse must

consequently be a sharer. In case, says I addressing my self to my brother, Mrs. *Riding's* memory can any ways enforce these strong inducements, I could assure you that she has a passionate esteem for you; and observe farther, that you owe numberless obligations to her. How would she be delighted with your presence! and what more favourable opportunity can you ever meet with, to discharge part of the great debt you owe her, for the care she so generously extended to your infant years?

I know not whether it were the strength of my arguments, or the tone of voice in which I spake, that made an impression on my brother; but I observ'd that he reflected deeply on what he had heard. *Gelin* spoke first, and said, that he thought my proposal was far from chimerical; and that, besides the honour it would be to serve his majesty of *Great-Britain* on so important an occasion, and the satisfaction they should have of obliging me; he was of opinion, as I had observed, that it also open'd them a way to make their fortune, and settle themselves in the world. They at last were unanimous in this opinion; and now the only objection they appeared to make, was, the long time such an enterprize



terprize wou'd in all probability take up. Upon this they again were urgent with me to go back with them in search of their island; and nam'd a certain number of days which would be employ'd therein; at the end whereof they promis'd, in case heaven were not more propitious than it had been hitherto, to carry me to *Martinitico*, and assist the lord *Axminster* in all his enterprizes. However, I was not to be wrought upon by this specious promise, and thereupon again begg'd them to concur with me instantly: And I set the difference of our conditions in so strong a light, *viz.* the little danger they wou'd run in delaying their search, and the great necessity there was of immediately succouring the viscount, that they at last acquiesced with my entreaties. Overjoy'd at the conquest, I added other motives to enflame them still more; and in order that their resolution might not have time to cool, I engaged them to sail forthwith for *America*. Their soldiers and sailors seem'd at first unwilling to go; however, we soon engag'd them in our interest, by assuring them they should be rewarded suitably to their merit.

My brother and his companions expatiated in the strongest terms on the sacrifice



fice they had now made for my sake. I confess'd ingenuously, that it exceeded all the returns, which either the lord *Axminster*, or my self, cou'd ever make to them for it. However, it was certain, they cou'd not have engaged in any attempt more advantageous, had they only consulted their own interest. This they had occasion to be more sensible of some time after, and to reproach themselves for their fickleness in changing their resolution. We sail'd with so favourable a wind, that in less than a month we reach'd *Martinico*. Unhappily our pilot was not perfectly acquainted with these seas, and the many islands in it. He knew the situation of *Martinico*; but as he had never been in those parts, he was not acquainted either with its coasts or harbours; so that instead of sailing for the western part of that island, which was the only one inhabited by the *French* at that time, he made directly east, which was a desert coast, or inhabited only by savages, commonly called *Caribbees*. After having gone round the coast five or six hours, we came to the mouth of a fine river, on both sides of which one could see a great way up the country. We immediately went on shore, and the prospect being very beautiful on all

all sides, we did not doubt but that part of the island into which we were got was very well peopled; it was so, indeed; but by the *Caribbees*, who are very cruel savages; and 'twas a great happiness for us, that we did not fall into their hands. As we found the river grow narrower the farther we went up it, the pilot was afraid we should not have depth of water enough; and therefore advised us to go ashore on both sides of it, and walk till such time as we could meet with some footsteps of human creatures, or signs of their habitations. We follow'd his advice, leaving *Johnson* with the sailors and six soldiers on board the vessel, and set out, being twelve in number, all well arm'd. We follow'd the bank of the river for about a league, being still persuaded, that so delightful a spot must necessarily be peopled by some *European* colony; and were agreeably confirm'd in our idea, when we discover'd a multitude of huts in a valley. We were now still more desirous of advancing forward, and made such haste, that we were able to see distinctly, what we till then had perceiv'd but imperfectly, because of the distance. I am very much mistaken, says one of our soldiers, if those huts are not inhabited by savages. He assur'd us, that

he knew exactly the form in which they were built, having been several times in the *West-Indies*. This hint made us to stand upon our guard. However we still advanced forward, 'till we spy'd several naked men, whom we then saw plainly were the natives of the island.

THE instant they saw us, they took to their heels. Being so well arm'd, we were not at all afraid of a people who appeared unable to make the least defence; whereupon we resolved to go among their huts, and enquire by signs, in case we could not be understood otherwise, the way to the *French* settlement. About fifty steps from the first huts, we passed by a hedge which enclosed a large field, in the middle of which was the settlement of the savages. We had not the least mistrust, when looking along the hedge, we discover'd in the inside of it, upwards of two hundred savages sitting together on the ground in a very peaceable manner; but the moment they perceiv'd us, they all rose up, and made a great shout. Notwithstanding our resolution, we were nevertheless frightened. Most of those savages, although naked, were arm'd with bows and long sharp-pointed sticks, not far unlike our pikes. They view'd us for some time,

time, without once stirring ; and perhaps they might be as much confounded as our selves, we being equally motionless. Nevertheless, as it was fit we should come to some resolution, and that this seem'd properly my office, since I was the only cause of their being expos'd to this danger ; I therefore spoke to my companions as follows. I am of opinion, that a medium may now be observ'd between fear and rashness. Let us try whether these savages may not have some sparks of humanity. I'll undertake to go up to them. As for you, stand to your arms, and do not stir from the place where you are. They undoubtedly won't be under any apprehensions, when they shall see me advancing forward alone, and in a friendly manner. I did not wait for an answer, being afraid every moment of the savages pouring in upon us. We were not above twenty steps from them, when I advanc'd forward. Possibly I should not have been so bold, had I been more sensible of the danger to which I expos'd my self. However, I still had so much presence of mind left, as to observe their aspect as I walk'd up towards them, and did not find that they put on a threatening air. I discovered a person among them, cover'd with a  
long

long black gown, whom I took for an *European*. Being got up to them, I made a very low bow, when they immediately crouded round me; felt my hands, and about my clothes, in order to find whether I had any arms about me. I made several signs to make my self, if possible, understood; they answer'd me, as I suppos'd, in their own language; but I could not make any thing of it; the sounds, to my ear, seeming altogether inarticulate. The man dress'd in black, after having gaz'd for some time upon me, advanc'd forward; and, to my great surprize, ask'd me in *French* what countreyman I was, and whether I cou'd speak his language? Yes, says I, I can; and think my self vastly happy in meeting with you: Inform me, what we are to hope or fear from these savages. He answer'd, these are of so fierce and capricious a nature, that they are not much to be depended upon; and I am very much surpriz'd, says he, how you could have the courage (since you are so few in number) to venture among them. You must have much more, says I to him, as you are alone, and seem to live among them without the least fear. He then told me that he was a *French* missionary; and that the  
desire



desire he had to instruct those savages in the first principles of christianity, made him wholly disregard the dangers to which he was every instant expos'd. I admire, says I, your zeal, in case you are prompted by no other motive than that of religion. But then let your love and charity extend to us, and endeavour to make the savages favourable to us. Tell them, that we don't come to take any thing from them; and that we only desire them to inform us, where the *French* settlements lie.

ACCORDINGLY he talk'd to them a few moments, and returning back, told me he had succeeded to my wishes. They gave me leave to walk back to my companions; and permitted him to go along with me, and inform them of what they wanted to know; and added, that they would give us leave to return on board our ship, and not hurt a hair of our heads. I left the savages, but the missionary would go along with me. *Gelin* overjoy'd to meet with one of his countreymen, was for asking him a thousand questions, which consequently would have taken up some time; but our honest ecclesiastic, being thoroughly acquainted with the nature and inclinations of those savages, did not think



us yet quite out of danger; and therefore advis'd us to take advantage, immediately, of the happy disposition to which he had brought them; by observing that it might very possibly change. We then contented ourselves with asking him a few questions, with regard to the situation of the *French* colony; when by an unexpected happiness, his answers inform'd us of the very circumstance, which was the chief occasion of our voyage. After having told us, that it would be impossible for us to miss *Fort-Royal*, which at that time was the most considerable settlement of the *French*, in case we continued to coast the island; he acquainted us, that he was come from thence but a fortnight before, and had seen a *French* vessel come into the harbour, having an *English* nobleman and his family on board. 'Twas plain this could be no other than the lord *Axminster*, which fill'd me with the highest transports of joy. Immediately I ask'd the missionary a great many questions; who, tho' he were not inform'd of the viscount's designs, nor of the success of his voyage; he nevertheless did us the utmost service, by informing us that the nobleman in question, a few days after his arrival at *Fort-Royal*, met with a *Spanish* vessel, on  
which

which he had set sail for the island of *Cuba*. Nothing remain'd now which cou'd induce us to continue in *Martinico*; upon which, after returning the missionary a thousand thanks, I was urgent with my companions to return to our ship, which we easily found. *Gelin* desir'd his countryman to accompany us to the river; however he refus'd to do it; but 'twas with the design of doing us a greater piece of service. As he was thoroughly acquainted with the genius and character of the savages, he was afraid they would not suffer us to return aboard, in so peaceable a manner as they had promis'd; and therefore thought it would be best to return back, in order to prevent them from changing their resolution.

WE then put out to sea again, firmly perswaded that we should meet with the lord *Axminster* at the *Havana*, the capital of the island of *Cuba*. We were not at a vast distance from it; and by what the missionary told us, his lordship could not have been there above a fortnight. I then recollected the motive which had prompted him to sail for the *Havana*; viz. the hopes that the old governor, father to his deceas'd lady, would be still there; in which case he flatter'd himself, he would certainly

certainly assist the enterprize he was going upon. Heaven was pleas'd to hear my prayers, by indulging us favourable weather, so that we reach'd the *Havana*, and were admitted into the harbour without any difficulty. This, however, was the least of my wishes; and the success of it was altogether indifferent to me, when I found that I was disappointed in what I so earnestly long'd after. My lord had been on the island, but was already gone from it. We were told this unhappy news upon our going ashore. Immediately my blood was chill'd, and I look'd upon this disappointment as an unlucky omen.

HOWEVER, we went into the town, where *Don Pedro* was still governor. We begg'd to be admitted to him, which was granted; and he receiv'd us with the greatest civility. I told his excellency, that I was seeking his son-in-law. He said he was as sorry that he had left the island, as I could be not to find him upon it. I did all that lay in my power, says he, to detain him, but to no purpose. *Don Pedro* deliver'd himself at first in a vague and indeterminate manner; but having afterwards reveal'd myself to him without the least reserve, when I found that

that he was inclin'd to succour his lordship, he then made no scruple to acquaint me with every thing that had pass'd between the viscount and himself, during his short stay in the *Havana*. I was overjoy'd, says he, at his arrival; and tho' I might, perhaps, have justly harbour'd some resentment, for his having carried off my daughter; yet, his presence, and the caresses of my grand-daughter *Fanny*, obliterated every thing of that nature. His lordship acquainted me with his misfortunes, and the low ebb to which he was reduc'd; upon which, I offer'd him an asylum here, and half my possessions; but neither my prayers or advantageous offers could prevail upon him to stay. He mention'd a commission which the king of *Great Britain* had given him, and desir'd me to assist him with a few soldiers and arms. But besides, that there was not then a single ship of war in the harbour at my disposal; I did not think it proper to attempt any thing to the prejudice of the common-wealth of *England*, which is now in alliance with *Spain*, without an express order from his catholick majesty for that purpose. The lord *Axminster* was so vex'd at my refusal, that he embark'd on board a *French* vessel which was going to  
sail

sail northward; the captain promising to put into some of the *English* colonies, of which his father had been formerly governor. I was not able, continued *Don Pedro*, to divert him from this resolution, tho' I set the danger of it in the strongest light; nor could I prevail with him to leave, at least, his daughter with me; tho' I represented to him how unfit she was to accompany him in so dangerous an enterprise.

How! says I; does not your excellency know what harbour they design'd to touch at, nor what course they steer'd? He assur'd me that he was wholly in the dark as to that particular, but that he fancied they would put into some part of *Florida*, which belong'd to the *English*, and possibly into *Carolina* or *Virginia*; unless he might rather chuse to sail directly for *New-England*, without putting in any where. These doubtful hints only increas'd our perplexity and confusion; however, this was all the information we could get in the island of *Cuba*. This news, tho' it heightned my uneasiness, it yet inflam'd my ardour the more; so that resolving to leave the *Havana* immediately, I prest my companions to set sail forthwith. We'll go for the continent, says I, and



I, and put into every port, till we get some intelligence. They did not seem averse to this proposal, when first I mention'd it; and accordingly we return'd on board that evening, intending to sail the next day. I was very uneasy all night long, but that did not arise from any suspicion I entertain'd of their infidelity; so far from it that I did not once suspect it; their friendship was my only consolation; and I did not think I was yet hated by heaven, since it still indulg'd me three such faithful, such generous friends. Nevertheless, whether it were that they repented they had ever undertaken the voyage, or were terrified at the apprehensions of the length and uncertainty of the course which I now propos'd to them; they that night form'd such a resolution, as I thought would have turn'd my brain when I first heard it, and sent *Gelin* to inform me of it in the morning.

He came alone into my cabin. After having made his compliments in the *French* manner, he said his companions had desir'd him to inform me, that it was with the utmost reluctance they found themselves oblig'd to discontinue their intended voyage. This, says he, was so dreadful an uneasiness to them, that they spent the



whole night in considering in what manner they should acquaint you with their resolution; and every one of them was resolv'd not to be the messenger of such ill news. He continued to say, that the situation of their affairs, and the extreme necessity they were under of going immediately in search of their wives; would not permit them to engage any longer in so hazardous an enterprize, (not to mention the time which might, perhaps, be spent in it) as that I was going upon. That they offer'd me what money they had, and whatever assistance they could possibly afford me, in their present circumstances. That in case heaven should be so good, as to indulge their desires; they promis'd to sail for the *West-Indies* with their wives; and meet me at any place I should appoint; when they would serve me to the utmost with their lives and fortunes. Lastly, that as they were resolv'd to leave me, they hop'd I would be so just, as to be persuaded, that nothing but reason and honour could have prevail'd with them to do it. That my harbouring any suspicious thoughts on this occasion, would fill them with the highest uneasiness; and in case I did not preserve as much love and esteem for them, as they promis'd

promis'd to entertain for me as long as they liv'd.

I LISTEN'D to the smooth tongu'd *Ge-  
lin*, in the highest distraction of mind, tho' I did my utmost to conceal it from him. I ask'd him whether he was fix'd in that resolution, and his companions likewise. This, answer'd he suddenly, is fix'd as fate, and we are unanimous. The tone of voice in which he utter'd these words, perswaded me that he himself had first suggested that fatal resolution; and I confess that from this instant, I conceiv'd an insuperable aversion to him. The reader will find in the sequel, several other circumstances which aggravated it; and the fatal accidents it occasion'd. I now neither complain'd against him, nor entreated him to indulge my fond request; but believing I should win my brother over, whose temper bore a much greater similitude to mine, I went instantly to his cabbin, and found him in it with *Johnson*. He advanc'd forward towards me with a mournful and melting air, when embracing me, he cry'd; accuse our stars for shedding such baleful influence; and be perswaded, that next to my dear wife, I love you more than any thing breathing. I'll

die for her, in case it be necessary; but depend upon't that in case I rescue her, I'll devote the remaining part of my life to your service, and shed the last drop of my blood in it. What's that you say? says I, interrupting him; alas! I don't require so much at your hands. My wants are not of such a nature, as to require that your blood should be spilt. All I desire is, that you'd only convey me to some place, whence I may have some hopes of going to viscount *Axminster*. I should not have propos'd so dangerous an enterprize to you, had it not been wholly for our sovereign's sake, and your own reputation and advantage. In case you are afraid of engaging in this glorious attempt, abandon it at once. But why should you refuse to complete, what you began purely out of affection for me? You have very little to do more . . . . at least enable me to reach the continent. Set me ashore in that part of *Carolina* which lies nearest to us; this is all I require of you, and then you may leave me without being guilty of infidelity. But can honour or friendship permit you to abandon me in this island? Dear brother, says I, embracing him; may I still call you by that tender name?

name? Cou'd I have thought your affection and generosity would have ended in this manner?

*Gelin*, who perhaps was piqu'd that I had left him so abruptly in my cabbin, spoke with great warmth, and did not give my brother time to make a reply. He ask'd me what reason I had to complain; and whether I ought not to be satisfied, with what they had hitherto done for me? Have not we, says he, oppos'd our softest inclinations, by suspending, in the manner we have done, the search after our wives? Have not we neglected our dearest interests, purely for the sake of yours, which are neither more urgent, or different from ours? We expected to meet with the lord *Axminster* in *Martinico*; and since, tho' you had not propos'd us to go farther, we yet have had the good nature to advance to the *Havana*, what cou'd you justly lay to our charge? Had we promis'd to put into all the ports in the *West-Indies*, or to accompany you to the remotest parts of *New-England*, whether you may, possibly, insist upon, our carrying you, in case we don't meet with the lord *Axminster* in our course? And tho' we could neglect our dear wives so far as this, yet as our ship is in so bad a condition,

tion, could you in reason expect us to undertake a voyage of six or seven hundred leagues; especially towards the north seas, which are so dangerous? No, no, dear Mr. *Cleveland*, says the silver-tongu'd *Gelin*, shaking his head at the same time; you have no reason to reproach us, and perhaps ought to give us some thanks. Consider that we are lovers as well as yourself; and are inform'd with the same tender wishes. Our engagements are, in some manner, more indispensable than yours: We are in search of our wives, whereas your pain is only for a mistress. With regard to his *Britannick* majesty, we could have wish'd it had been in our power to undertake any thing for his service; but we are less able to serve you, than your sovereign. King *Charles* will accept of the will for the deed, in case he should one day hear how desirous we were of exerting ourselves in his service.

AFTER this clear and positive declaration, I found I had now but little hopes left. However, my brother endeavour'd to soften all such expressions in *Gelin's* answer, as seem'd a little harsh. Accordingly he made a great many apologies; embraced me several times; shed tears, and concluded with offering to go with me



me as far as the peninsula of *Tegeſta*, whence I might advance as far as I pleas'd into the continent. My grief was ſo great, and my reſentment ſo ſtrong, that I reſus'd the offer; particularly ſince as this peninsula was inhabited by the *Spaniards*, and not above thirty leagues from *Cuba*, I was perſuaded I might eaſily meet with a veſſel at the *Havana* to carry me over. Leave me, leave me, ſays I . . . I cannot detain you againſt your wills; but if I can form a judgment of your preſent circumſtances, and what may be for your real advantage; the reſolution you have now taken will not one day be thought a good one; and you will perhaps wiſh you had not broke your promiſe with me. They were again going to juſtify themſelves, and prove that they had fulfill'd their engagements, but I withdrew inſtantly, and would not hear them. They ſuffer'd me to continue alone for ſome moments in my cabbin, I being determin'd to let them go, and not ſpeak to them more. However, my brother came a little after to my door, when he repeated, with an air of the deepeſt melancholly, the prodigious regret he had to leave me; and at the ſame time deſir'd I wou'd indulge him.

two things, which, if I refus'd, he said he should consider me as the most savage creature living. The one was, that I would accept of an hundred pistoles, in order to enable me to pursue my voyage; and the other, that I would point out to him exactly, the place where he might have the hopes of meeting me again, when their search after their wives should be ended. After a numberless multitude of intreaties, I at last accepted of the money; but with regard to the second article, I told him it would be impossible for me to give him any satisfaction on that head. Heaven only knows, says I, what will become of me. I am to steer my course only as chance shall direct, and can expect nothing but new scenes of inquietude and sorrow. Farewell then, says he, with a most melting air; to leave you, gives me a mortal uneasiness; but alas! my heart is bound to love by indissoluble ties. If heaven has any blessing in reserve for me, all I ask, is, that I may have the happiness of seeing you again, after I have found my wife. Upon this they set sail. To say the truth, I believe they were very sorry to leave me; but they were bound by stricter engagements,

gagements, than all the promises they had made me. I judg'd of them by myself;—for could any consideration in the world have prevail'd with me to lose sight, as it were, for a single moment, of viscount *Axminster* and his daughter?

THEY had now left me at the *Havana*, with this comfort however, that I was at liberty, and could take such measures as I should think most conducive to the furthering of my designs. I depended very much on the governor's kindness, and accordingly waited on him, to enquire when I might depend upon an opportunity of leaving the island; to ask his advice with regard to the course I should steer, and to beg his assistance. I cou'd not expect that he would indulge me a favour which he had refus'd lord *Axminster* and his daughter; but I was far from requesting such a boon; and indeed he immediately acquiesc'd with my desires. He presented me with a negro, who had been many years his slave, a fellow of experienc'd fidelity. His view in giving me this slave, was not so much that he might serve me by way of servant, as a guide and an interpreter; this slave having gone over a great part of the *American* continent, and could speak the

principal tongues us'd in the several countries of it. The governor likewise gave me a considerable sum of money, and a passport in which he recommended me to the favour of such *Spaniards* as I should meet with. As for my course, and the time of my leaving the island, he said there was no possibility of telling me any thing certain on that head. I was therefore oblig'd to stay in the *Havana*, in expectation of meeting with some vessel which might convey me to the *English* colonies; and afterwards leave the success of my voyage to chance. I waited two months, but spent them in the study of wisdom, as the only thing which could soften the uneasiness with which this delay fill'd me; and moderate the impatient desire I had, to find all I held dear. At length heaven was so gracious as to indulge part of my desires. A vessel arriv'd, belonging to the island of *St. Domingo*, and laden with goods, which were to be dispos'd off in those parts whither I wanted to be convey'd. The only favour I had to desire of the captain, was, to take me on board, which he accordingly did, and my slave likewise; after I had taken leave of the governor, who made me promise to use all my credit with

with the lord *Axminster*, in order to engage his return to *Cuba*.

WE got very safe through the streights of *Babama*, and after having past the point or peninsula of *Tegesta*, we only coasted along the shore, landing in all places, where the captain thought he could dispose of his goods. We first cast anchor in some little *Spanish* ports which lay in our way; when I enquir'd after the lord *Axminster*, but to no purpose. I had little better success in a settlement of *French* calvinists, whom we met with farther up, for these did not so much as know his lordship's name. However, they inform'd me, that a few months before, a *French* vessel which came from *Cuba*, had cast anchor for some days in their road; and that they had taken notice of a few *Englishmen* aboard her, who appear'd to be persons of some distinction.

FLATTER'D by the hopes which is natural to the unfortunate, I immediately fancied those could be no other than my lord and his attendants. These ideas, how airy soever they might be, sooth'd me vastly. From hence we put into some small ports in *Carolina*; but although we there found *Englishmen*, from whom I might more naturally expect some informations;



I yet could not meet with any, nor hear the least news, after we had coasted for above an hundred leagues. But now I began to be more uneasy; for I cou'd scarce think that my lord, who fully intended to go ashore in some of the *English* ports, had pass'd by so many, and not once put into any of them. A circumstance which increas'd my fears, was, the *Spanish* captain's resolution; who told me several times, that he absolutely intended not to go farther than the bay of *Chesapeek*. As the lord *Axminster* had not touch'd at *Carolina*, 'twas probable to believe he had sail'd for *Virginia*, or perhaps *New-England*: And what hopes could I entertain of meeting with him, in case I should be obliged to return back with the *Spanish* crew, or wait in some barren or obscure port, in expectation of another vessel; which possibly I might not meet with at last? Whilst I was tortured with these inquietudes, the vessel sail'd on. We were already got off the coast of *Virginia*, and were making for *Chesapeek Bay*, when at the entrance of it, in the little harbour call'd *Riswey*, which our captain propos'd as the end of his course; I at last heard what I long'd so much to know, viz. that viscount *Axminster*, son to the former governor

vernour of those countries, had landed there a few months ago; that the ship, which had brought him, having continu'd its course northwards, my lord had gone on board a little vessel which had carried him up the bay, whence he went to *James-Town*, one of the principal of all *Virginia*; that his lordship and his retinue arrived safe there; and that I might depend upon the truth of what I then heard, they themselves having mann'd the vessel above-mention'd, and were return'd to *Rifsway* a few days after they had done his lordship this little piece of service.

THEY had no sooner done speaking, but I return'd thanks to heaven; and so great were my transports, that all the standers-by seem'd surpriz'd at me. I observ'd that some of the chief inhabitants of the town, seem'd now to gaze upon me in a more affectionate manner; and looking upon me, discours'd together, as though they wish'd me well. I suppos'd they were guessing, as well as they could, what motives brought me among them, and what it was that fill'd me with such sudden joy; I even imagin'd, that the part they seem'd to bear in it, was owing to some secret cause, which I explain'd to lord *Axminster's* advantage, and indeed

was

was not mistaken. This nobleman, finding that the *English* there retain'd a grateful remembrance of his father and himself, did not scruple to reveal his name, and acquaint them with his commission. They had, till then, submitted to the new government of *England*; but less from choice and inclination, than a blind impulse, which generally hurries on the common people in a thoughtless manner: So, that having no particular engagements which should attach them to the protector's person, they recogniz'd the king's authority without the least difficulty, and return'd to their allegiance; especially as they were prompted to this by the son of their former governour, whose commands they had once obey'd with the utmost chearfulness. This little settlement was therefore the first conquest which the lord *Axminster* made for his sovereign; and he obtain'd it upon the easy terms of discovering himself, and declaring his intentions. He was afterwards put in a condition to take *James Town*; the inhabitants would not even have refus'd to follow him in a body, but would have form'd themselves into a company for his defence, had his lordship thought this necessary. I was told all these particulars by some of  
the

the townsmen, with whom I had occasion to discourse; and I did not find but they were unanimous in their resolutions to stand by my lord, and do me all the service that lay in their power.

They offer'd to get me conducted to *James Town*. I accepted of their kindness, and leaving the *Spanish* captain who return'd for *St. Domingo*, I put my self into the hands of my countreymen. They gave me a small vessel and four sailors, when we enter'd the bay; but the wind was contrary for some time. However, as this was the only obstacle I had to fear, I look'd upon so short a delay as nothing; when being at the mouth of the river *Pawhatan*, which empties itself in the bay, and which we were to go up, *James Town* being situated on the banks of it; I spy'd a man of war just coming out of that river, and seemingly shaping her course towards the main ocean. I did not doubt but this was an *English* ship; however, the joy which this might otherwise have fill'd me with, was chang'd into a deadly fear, when I believ'd it was the very ship which captain *Wills* commanded.

THIS was but too true, it being really that

that perfidious villain's ship. Alas! he himself was on board of her; and the horror with which I was suddenly seiz'd, gave me at once but too strong an idea of the danger I was in. But why should I say the danger I was in? How inevitable soever my destruction might appear, Heaven is my witness, that the first pangs I felt were not upon my own account. I trembled for something that was more precious to me than either my own life or liberty. Captain *Wills*, says I, is just come from *James Town*; he undoubtedly found viscount *Axminster* there; a villain is always completely such: I imagin'd there was no room to doubt but that he had fill'd up the measure of his iniquity, in exercising his barbarity over his lordship. I cou'd not see any likelihood of his being prevented to do this; for his ship was so well arm'd, that it was not probable *James Town* could have made any resistance; so that supposing his lordship had been receiv'd as favourably in that town, as he had been in *Riswey*; 'twas not probable he could have put himself into a posture of defence soon enough, to repulse the army by force. I therefore concluded that he had been obliged to submit, and perhaps was seiz'd by the traytor; who, I suppos'd,



suppos'd, had put him on board his ship, in order to carry him in triumph to *England*, and deliver him up to the protector.

THE ship was at such a distance from us, that I had time sufficient for making these reflections, which filled me with inexpressible anguish. However, it did not deprive me of the strength and liberty of mind, which I wanted so much at that juncture. In this, I may affirm, I always differ'd from the rest of mankind, and 'tis what form'd the very essence of my character. I know not whether my publishing this circumstance will be look'd upon as ostentation; but tho' I might expect that such a confession as this would be glorious to me, it yet has cost me too many pangs, to make me susceptible of so trifling a sensation as that we call vanity. 'Tis therefore certain, that grief never had so absolute an ascendant over me, but reason was still predominant: but then 'tis no less sure, that tho' this resolution, which possibly made my conduct more agreeable to the dictates of wisdom, it never contributed in the least to the tranquillity of my mind. The unhappy may generally be divided into two classes. The first are those who sink, in some measure, under the weight of  
their

their misfortunes, and who sometimes become less sensible to them, merely because they yield to their attacks; like as a tree, which the more it gives way to the wind, the less it is hurt by its blasts. The second class are those who repel ill fortune, and by that means also are less affected by it, which may partly be owing to this cause; that as their struggles take up part of their attention, and the collected strength of their minds, they consequently have less time to reflect on the evils they suffer. With regard to my self, I may be placed in a third class; and perhaps am the only individual in it. I have struggled all my life against sorrow, but was never able to sooth it; my mind having ever been capacious enough, both to repel ill fortune, and attend to the circumstance which occasions it. The various thoughts which here crouded my brain, put me to inexpressible torture; but then this did not make me so far despond, but I was still able to form a resolution. The first which I made at once, was, to surrender my self voluntarily to captain *Wills*, in case I knew that the lord *Axminster* and his daughter were on board his ship; for I could with pleasure almost have devoted my self to imprisonment, or the most cruel

cruel death, were I but to share it with them. But as I was not yet directly certain, how providence intended to dispose of them; I thought it would be proper to employ artifice upon this occasion, in order to inform my self of what I was so desirous of knowing. I had by good luck chang'd my dress in *Cuba*, and therefore thought if I disguis'd my face, it would be impossible for any one to know me. Accordingly I acquainted the sailors with my design, who immediately consented to do me all the service that lay in their power. Upon this I borrow'd a pitiful perriwig, which I clapp'd on my head; and having daub'd my face and hands with some dirt and slime which I scrap'd from the bottom of the vessel; I was so completely disguis'd, that it would have been impossible for my most intimate acquaintance to know me. And now being no longer afraid of appearing before captain *Wills*, I desired the sailors to make directly for the ship. We got near enough to speak with her, when I perceived the captain upon deck. He made a signal with his hand for us to come nearer; and it being almost a stark calm, we soon came up with her. My design was to go on board his ship; but I consider'd, that

that in case the viscount should not happen to be in her, this would be a very imprudent action; and therefore chose rather to let one of the sailors first make an enquiry; in which case, if the viscount should unhappily be aboard, I was at liberty to act as I pleas'd. Accordingly I taught that sailor, whom I thought to ~~have~~ most sense, his lesson in a few words; and sending him on board the captain, I waited in the vessel till his return, which he did in less than four minutes. Be easy, says the sailor, my lord is certainly safe, for the captain does not know where he is; and I am mistaken if he is not now in quest of him. He ask'd me, with an angry air, whether I had heard no news of him. He then enquir'd whither we were bound, and whence we came; and having satisfied him in these particulars, he order'd me to go away.

THESE words reviv'd me, upon which we immediately made off as fast as possible. The only uneasiness I felt in our way to *James Town*, was that I consider'd poor Mrs. *Lallin* was in the hands of that barbarous wretch *Wills*. I again recommended her to the protection of heaven; and tho' I devoted my life to the service of the viscount and his daughter; I yet found

found that gratitude would have prompted me to hazard it with pleasure, to rescue her from the villain who detain'd her. At last we arriv'd at *James Town*. There seem'd to have been some disturbance in the harbour; and the inhabitants look'd as tho' they were in expectation of some extraordinary event. A great many of them ran to the shore and croud-ed about our vessel; and I observ'd that they discover'd some surprize, to see only an unknown person, a negro, and four sailors belonging to *Rifwey* on board of her. They ask'd whether we had not met captain *Wills*, but that was all. I went into the town, not knowing certainly whether they were friends or enemies; and therefore did not dare to enquire of them, what I so eagerly desir'd to know. Being afraid lest some indiscretion on my side, might prejudice my lord's affairs, I therefore assum'd a false name. I pretended that I came to *Jamestown* in order to trade, I accordingly took up my residence in a very mean house; and carried my four sailors along with me, being unwilling to part with them, till such time as I might see clearer into matters.

THE *Englishman* at whose house I chanc'd to lodge, was happily a zealous royalist,



royalist, who was greatly afflicted at what had just before happen'd in *James-Town*. I was scarce come into the house, but he prevented my enquiries, by asking me whether I had heard of the alarm, and what I thought of the change of government in *England*. The air with which he ask'd me this question, plainly show'd how he stood affected. The answer I made, pleas'd him highly; so that observing no manner of reserve during the rest of our conversation, he exclaim'd against the protector, and the parliament, and especially against *Wills*. His invectives against the latter, gave me an opportunity of enquiring in what manner he had signaliz'd himself in *James Town*, upon which he gave me the following account.

VISCOUNT *Axminster*, says he, arriv'd safely there two months before; and found the inhabitants of it as zealous for his majesty's interest, as those of *Riswey*. The governor and the greatest part of the townsmen, had received him in as dutiful a manner as if he had been the king himself. His lordship had spent a fortnight there, wholly employ'd in contriving methods to reduce the rest of the countrey to their allegiance; and imagining he was particularly secure of the

fidelity of the inhabitants of the place above-mention'd ; he left it, and went to *Pawhatan*, a considerable town, which, as well as *James-Town*, is situated on the river that bears its name, but is much higher up in the countrey. Here he found it a very difficult matter to get himself recogniz'd as governor in the king's name; so that he would have succeeded very easily in his enterprize, had not the inhabitants of that place oppos'd him. Things were in this state, when captain *Wills's* ship arriv'd unexpectedly in the harbour of *James-Town*. I before observ'd that he had so strong a force, that it was impossible for this town to resist him, tho' indeed it is one of the strongest in that countrey, but then it was not prepar'd against an attack. The governor had been forc'd to open his gates to the captain, which he did the more willingly, because as he imagin'd that wretch wou'd make but a short stay ; he hop'd after his departure, that he might be at liberty to return to his allegiance and act as he might think proper. But tho' himself, and the greatest part of the townsmen were zealous royalists ; nevertheless a few of them were of an opposite character. These immediately acquainted captain *Wills* with the viscount's arrival,

arrival, and the state of his majesty's affairs. This was all that vile creature desir'd to know, and had induc'd him to sail from *Jamaica* to *Virginia*, in order to make a merit of his zeal for the protector at his return to *England*. He therefore reproach'd the governor and inhabitants of *James-Town* in the severest terms for their revolting from the commonwealth of *England*, and thereupon prepar'd to punish them for it.

WHILE these things were doing, the viscount resided peaceably in *Pawhatan*; and as this place was far less capable of making a defence than *James-Town*, it might very easily have been taken by surprise. Captain *Wills* (landed two hundred men, (whose crew consisted of three hundred) when heading them himself, he immediately march'd for *Pawhatan*. The viscount would certainly have been taken prisoner, had *Wills* fallen unexpectedly upon him; but the governor of *James-Town* was so generous as to dispatch one of his domesticks, to acquaint him with the impending danger. Tho' the messenger made all the haste imaginable, yet *Wills* had like to have got the start of him; so that had not heaven interpos'd immediately on this occasion, the viscount

and

and his followers would have been surpriz'd in the town. All they could do, was to fly; for being unprovided with arms, it would have been impossible for them to have resisted two hundred men. Their flight gave *Wills* the highest uneasiness; however he did all he cou'd to find the viscount, and spent above a fortnight in searching after him, either in *Pawhatan* or the places adjacent. But finding it was in vain, he return'd to *James-Town*, where his men continued the search for above a month. At last, imagining that his lordship was perhaps gone on board a ship, and sail'd for some other colony; he resolv'd to leave *James-Town*, and search for him in all the *English* settlements; and was going upon this the very day I met with him. With regard to the hurry and confusion which I saw in the harbour at my arrival, it was owing to two causes; first to *Wills's* departure, which gave great satisfaction to most of the inhabitants; and secondly, to the hopes they entertain'd upon spying my vessel, that the viscount was on board her; who, they suppos'd, having happily escap'd the enemy, put so much confidence in them, that he was coming to reside again in their town.

THO' what I now heard was some satisfaction to me, because I thereby found that the viscount was out of danger, nevertheless several circumstances gave me great uneasiness. For notwithstanding I had undertaken so long a course, and enquir'd about so much from place to place; I yet had made little more progress in it, than when I left the island of *Cuba*; since I scarce knew which way to go, or whether I should meet with success. I enquir'd if the viscount had struck up a friendship, with any of the inhabitants of *James-Town*; upon which I was told the names of several persons he had visited privately; but these swell'd to so long a catalogue, that I was perswaded his lordship would not have favour'd them all with his more intimate confidence; and being afraid lest I should prejudice his interest, in case I were too open; I resolv'd to leave that town without discovering my secrets to any person. Accordingly I set out for *Pawhatan* with my slave, judging that 'twas most likely I should hear which way my lord was gone, in that town, whence he last set out with his family. I was vastly melancholy all the way I went; for the hopes which I thought were accomplishing upon my coming



coming to *Riswey*, seem'd now remov'd at an infinite distance; and what remain'd of them were so weak and confus'd; that they daily chang'd into fears; and at certain moments, into despair. Love was still uppermost in my soul, but then I was not sensible to the delightful ideas which that passion inspires. The impatience I had of seeing again the viscount, was almost as strong as the passion abovemention'd; Mrs. *Riding* possess'd the next place in my heart; then, the remembrance of Mrs. *Lallin* would often force a pang from me; and all these sensations were intermix'd with my usual wishes, for the enjoyment of a calm and unruffled life, which might give me an opportunity of studying what I so earnestly panted after, wisdom. So finding that the possession of the only things which could make me easy, were still farther off, I was vastly dejected; and cou'd not call up any thing in my mind, which might administer the least consolation.

*Iglou*, for that was the name of my slave, had now liv'd long enough with me, to know the state of my soul; and had so much affection for me, that he sympathiz'd with me in my distress. The thorough knowledge he had of this part

of *America*, and his skill and dexterity, which I had often put to the trial, were my only resources. This I wou'd often hint to him, purposely that he might be prompted to serve me with zeal and fidelity; and assur'd him, that he shou'd be rewarded in proportion to his services. We arriv'd at *Pawhatan*, where the viscount and *Wills* were all the talk. I observ'd the same caution at my arrival there, as I had done at *James-Town*; enquiring, without any seeming warmth, into all the late transactions; and endeavouring to find out some glimpse of hopes, by being told the way which his lordship had taken. All people pitied him, and spoke variously of the way he was gone, so that I cou'd not meet with any thing satisfactory. At last I consider'd, that in case the viscount had acquainted any person with the place he was going to; it must be an *English* gentleman, at whose house himself, and his family, had lodg'd in *Pawhatan*. Immediately I resolv'd to insinuate myself into this gentleman's friendship; but finding that he scrupled to open himself to me; I told him that the viscount had a prodigious friendship for me; and inform'd him of the strong motives I had to wish success to all his lordship's undertakings.

takings. The account I gave him, gain'd me his confidence at once; and indeed this was the only refuge I had now left.

THIS honest gentleman inform'd me of particulars that were known to him only; and which would have been conceal'd from every body but myself. He had not only done the viscount all the service that lay in his power, during his stay at *Pawbatan*; but upon the first news of *Wills's* arrival in those parts, he had undertaken to find out a place for his lordship, whither he might retire in safety. He had advis'd him to go by land for *Carolina*, and having conducted him to a countrey seat of his which lay in the way, and at a little distance from *Pawbatan*; he there got horses and provisions for his journey, and two faithful guides who knew the way perfectly. Two reasons had prompted him to advise his lordship to go for *Carolina*; the first was, because he would be but at a little distance from the *Spaniards*, among whom he might shelter himself, in case the fury of his enemies should force him to it; the second reason, was, the hopes he had of disappointing *Wills*, who would hardly imagine that his lordship was gone back again; and therefore wou'd not fail of searching north-

wards, after he should have sought for him to no purpose all over *Virginia*. My lord set out with his daughter, Mrs. *Riding*, six *English* gentlemen, eight servants and two guides, so that he had sixteen persons in his train. You'll certainly, says the gentleman, meet with him either in *Warwick*, which is the first habitation this way, in *Carolina*, or at—— in case he thought proper to go farther up into the country.

HEARING this happy news, I continued no longer in *Pawhatan* than was necessary for buying two horses; and relying on the assurances of *Iglou*, who promis'd to carry me safe to *Warwick*; I therefore refus'd, in an obliging manner, to accept of another guide which the *English* gentleman offer'd me. At my taking leave, I ask'd him what he thought of the inhabitants of *Pawhatan*, and whether his lordship could return to their town with any safety. He answer'd, that his opinion was, they were unanimously devoted to his majesty's interest, as well as the rest of the *Virginians*; but that he was afraid they would not dare to discover their inclinations, till *Wills* had left those seas. That the viscount intended to raise a little body of forces in *Carolina*,

*rolina*, in order to march against *Wills*; and if possible, make him smart for the terror with which he had fill'd the townsmen of *Pawbatan*. Hearing this, I set out with *Iglou*, we being mounted on two very strong horses; and as we were to pass thro' a wide-extended desert countrey, we took provisions enough for our journey.

THE inconveniencies I suffer'd upon the road, made me judge of those which the viscount and his family had been oblig'd to submit to. Indeed, as they had two cover'd waggons, they consequently spent the nights better; since they were enabled to shelter themselves from the inclemencies of the weather. As for myself, not having that conveniency, I was forc'd to stop the moment it begun to grow dark, and to make the grass my bed; and thought myself vastly happy, whenever I met with a tree to serve me as a canopy, and whose leaves we might strip, to cover myself with. *Iglou* offer'd to lay all his clothes upon me, to secure me from the cold which was felt in the night; but humanity would not suffer me to accept of them. Tho' I was his master, I yet was sensible that he was no less a human creature than myself; and consequently



that he had as much right to all the succours which might be necessary, as I could have. We journey'd on in this manner thro' the midst of a thousand difficulties, and got to the *Apalatian* mountains. Tho' I was wholly unacquainted with those parts, I yet perceiv'd that *Iglou* went too far, as I thought, westward; and that we travell'd a little too much to the left, for *Carolina*; and ask'd him the reason of it. He told me he was forc'd to go round the mountains, in order to avoid several deep marshes, which it would have been impossible for us to cross. This chain of mountains and rocks, which go by the name of *Apalatians*, extend a prodigious way along the *English* colonies; which they separate from a great number of barbarous nations, who inhabit the inland parts of the continent. But tho' the great height of them generally cuts off all communication, there yet are sometimes deep vallies in the midst of them, thro' several of which we past. I observ'd that *Iglou* always threw his eyes round him with the utmost circumspection, and with some confusion, whenever we past thro' these chasms. I ask'd several times the reason of this; but he industriously avoided to answer me, which at last began to  
give

give me some uneasiness; upon which I insisted to know it. You then are resolv'd upon this, says he, with a serious air; but it will perhaps give you some uneasiness. There is always danger in passing thro' these openings. Tho' the savages who inhabit the other side of the mountains, are not cruel in their nature; they yet are great thieves, and prodigiously fond of plunder; and shou'd they spy us, 'tis a thousand to one but we are robb'd. My blood curdled almost in my veins at hearing this. D'ye think, says I to him immediately, the viscount went this way? Infallibly, says he, in case his guides brought him the shortest and safest. Heavens! says I, thou knowest for whom I now implore thy succour. And indeed, my fears and good wishes were far from centring in myself: All my thoughts were directed to the dear object of my affections; and I trembled as I ask'd *Iglou* a thousand questions relating to the savages, and in what manner they treated their prisoners.

*Iglou* was perfectly acquainted with their customs, his native place being but at a little distance from their countrey. He us'd all the arguments he cou'd to cheer me up; however, after we had rode for

some days, we discover'd on a sudden about an hundred savages, coming from a deep valley, and who cou'd not go on their way, without passing by us. *Iglou*, in the utmost surprize, conjur'd me to stop. I'll undertake, says he, to bring you off safe, but then you must hide yourself. Accordingly, he made me alight, and pointing to me to retire to a tall thicket which was at our left, he desir'd me to stay there with the horses, till he came back. Don't stir from the place, says he, because so long as I shall be assur'd that you keep in it, I shall have an opportunity of making the savages turn off another way. But though you shou'd continue two or three days here alone, don't be uneasy upon that account. As he was speaking he undrest himself, when I was surpriz'd to see him have all the air of a savage. He again begg'd me not to be afraid, in case he should be so long absent, and assur'd me that I might depend on his fidelity. I let him do as he thought proper, without once enquiring into his designs. Upon this he left me, kissing my hand at the same time, in testimony of his affection. I now was left alone, seated behind the thicket which  
entirely

entirely hid me, holding the bridles of our two horses in my hand. I won't disguise my fears, for they were very great; but then I take heaven to witness that myself was not the object of them. My thoughts were wholly employ'd on the viscount and his daughter. What, says I, must have been their fate in case they have been so unhappy, as to fall inadvertently into the hands of the savages! All the blood in my veins was congeal'd at this reflection. So far from endeavouring to fly from this wild people, I shou'd have deliver'd myself into their hands, had I been assur'd that my lord had been taken by them.

I soon lost sight of *Iglou*, and spent the rest of the day, as the reader will easily believe, in great anxiety; but was seiz'd with a mortal uneasiness, when I heard him coming in the dead of night. He had taken care to speak, purposely to prevent my being frightened. Well *Iglou*, says I, what news have you to tell me? Did my lord and miss *Fanny* fall a prey to savages, and are we to expect the same sad fate? He attempted to conceal his suspicions to me, but I observ'd his confusion, and therefore begg'd him to be sincere. Upon this he answer'd, that as  
for

for us, we were out of all danger; that the savages were gone another way, upon his putting them on a wrong scent; and that we had nothing to fear from them; however, that since I was resolv'd to know the truth; he was afraid the viscount had not been so fortunate as myself. I went up, says he, to the savages; and telling them where I was born, they also inform'd me, what countrey they belong'd to. I pretended that I had lost myself for several days in this wild place, and therefore desir'd them to direct me the way home. They did as I desir'd, but would not let me go, till I had first acquainted them whether I had not met with some prisoners who had escap'd out of their hands, about a few days before. They did not tell me who these prisoners were, and I did not dare to ask them any questions for fear of raising their suspicions: The only advantage I made of what I then heard, was, my assuring them that the persons they were in pursuit of, were gone a quite different way from that we intended to pursue; upon which they immediately went the way I had directed them. But to be sincere, says *Iglou*, I'm afraid the prisoners they mention'd are the viscount and his train; for I judge,  
from



from the answers they made, that these people are not engag'd in war with their neighbours. Saying this, my honest slave advis'd me not to stay here any longer; and to take advantage of the night, which was not quite so dark but we might find our way in it.

THIS account threw me into an inexpressible consternation. Alas! *Iglou*, says I, I cannot stir from hence, till I hear farther about the viscount. Seek him I must, though it cost me my life and liberty. Assist me as thou hast hitherto done, and give me your advice. *Iglou* assured me he was no less perplex'd than my self, and that he absolutely did not know which course to take. If my lord, says he, is still accompanied with his guides, 'tis probable he is gone towards *Carolina*; but in case they are gone from him, I know not where to look for him. Indeed, the whole was such a dilemma to me, that I did not know what was to be done. For the sad condition the viscount was in, plung'd me into such an abyss of reflection, as almost distracted me: for supposing, says I, he had fallen into the hands of the savages, and was escap'd from them, he must certainly have been plunder'd: I could never suppose that he had  
sav'd

fav'd his followers, his provisions and vehicles; 'twas not probable that Miss *Fanny* and Mrs. *Riding* had got away: This last reflection pierced my very soul. Blessed God! says I, every moment; could you cease to protect my *Fanny*? and could you abandon her in the extremest danger?

UPON meditating for a considerable time, I fancied that in case his lordship had saved himself and his followers, he could not be far from the place where we then stood. The savages would not have fought in that part for him, had they not believed he was gone that way. And as I argued upon the measures he had taken in order to avoid their pursuit, methoughts his lordship must first have endeavoured to hide himself, rather than make off; because the former was much easier, since he was wholly unacquainted with the country. Heaven undoubtedly inspir'd me with this thought; heaven, I say; and I return it my most hearty and sincere thanks upon that account to this very day; for had I not made this reflection; the most virtuous, the most lovely creature upon earth had been undone. Gods! what words shall I find to paint the description I am now going to give! and how will my  
readers

readers believe after they have read it, that I have still more melancholy, more melting incidents to relate?

I TOLD *Iglou* what I thought on this matter, when having agreed not to leave the place we were in, till we had first searched all about it; we waited impatiently for the morning, in order to begin. Accordingly we got on horseback by break of day, and examined all such places very narrowly, as we imagined most fit for a retreat. We look'd into every valley, wood and thick bush; in short we pry'd into every place eighteen or twenty miles round us: and spar'd our horses so little, that though the sun darted his rays very fiercely, we yet kept them in action the greatest part of the day; and 'twas not till the afternoon, when finding them almost spent with weariness, and being our selves almost overpower'd with the heat, we agreed to stop under the covert of some bushes, and to take a little refreshment. Accordingly I threw my self down on the grass, which was very thick and high; less oppress'd by the violent fatigue, than by the perpetual reflections which tortur'd my bosom. *Iglou* was either employ'd, at a few paces from me, about the horses, or in taking

1

king

king out some provisions; when I was surpriz'd to see him sink down on a sudden, and come towards me upon all four. Heavens! says I to him, my heart going pit-a-pat at the same time, what's the matter, *Iglou*? What have you discovered? He answer'd, that he had spy'd some savages in the thicket; but provided we were but as cautious as the night before; he hoped I might not only avoid them, but that he might learn something from them which might be to our advantage. He then desired me to lie close. Our horses stood behind some trees, where they cool'd themselves; so that not finding it possible, either for them or me to change our places; he instantly threw off his clothes, in order to run among the savages. He had not been gone above a quarter of an hour, when he return'd back, along with a man who was also naked, but had a much whiter skin. I flatter'd my self for a moment that he brought me good news, and that a savage who accompanied him in so peaceable a manner, could not be our enemy? Alas! can I give the name of happy news to the account he brought me? Let the reader hear it, and afterwards judge.

THIS

THIS naked man whom I took for a savage, came up towards me, when fixing his eyes upon me, neither of us utter'd one word. At last he flung himself upon my neck, and clasping me with all his strength; 'tis Mr. *Cleveland*, says he several times; 'tis he himself. I got from his arms, and not knowing what construction to put upon the transport, I asked him with a confused tone of voice, who he was; and since I knew him to be an *Englishman* by his voice; by what adventure he was come into that desert countrey, and how he came to have no clothes to his back. Alas! says he, follow me here, and see the unfortunate lord *Axminster*, who waits for you at about an hundred paces from this place; come and see his daughter, Mrs. *Riding*, and part of the officers who follow'd him from *Roan*, and among whom you may remember to have seen me. The dear name of viscount *Axminster*, that of his daughter and Mrs. *Riding*, my being assured that I was not above an hundred steps from them, and that they waited for me; love, friendship, gratitude, what shall I say? Every thing that is soft and tender, made so strong an impression on my heart; that this crowd of emotions overpowering me, I fell in a swoon. How-

ever



ever I did not long continue in it; but opening my eyes, and looking a moment on the person who spoke to me, I knew him to be Mr. *Youngster*, viscount *Axminster's* gentleman of the horse; but I was so amazed, that I scarce had the power to open my mouth, and to hold out my arms to him. I remember you, says I with a faint voice, your name is *Youngster*; and you was gentleman of the horse to my dear lord and father. Alas! what did you say to me? Where shall I find him? Make haste and conduct me to him. And miss *Fanny* too! says I scarce able to speak; don't you deceive me? Shall I again be blessed with the sight of that dearest of creatures? My trouble was so great, that this added to the violent fatigue I had sustain'd that day, not to mention that I had taken no sustenance, made me so weak, that I was forced to hold by *Iglon* as I spoke to Mr. *Youngster*.

He said, that so far from flattering me, he had most lamentable news to tell; that his lordship could describe what he had to say, much better than himself; but that in the mean time, he thought it would be proper to give me an idea of the sad condition to which his lordship was reduced, and also his train who were now re-duced

duced to a very small number : that having been imposed upon by his guides, attack'd by a company of savages, and taken prisoner with his people, who had made a stout resistance, and most of whom had lost their lives in defending his ; he had spent near a fortnight in the huts of his barbarous conquerors : That he had been plunder'd ; not only of his equipage, but of all his clothes, and those of miss *Fanny*, Mrs. *Riding*, and the rest of his followers ; that they had been obliged to make themselves girdles of grass and rushes, and to weave them into a kind of gowns for the two ladies, and their two women ; but that these would scarce cover their nakedness : That as the savages had not used them cruelly, or even set a watch over them ; they had, according to the viscount's hint, fled away in the night, and had escaped unperceiv'd ; that they had enjoyed their liberty about four days, but that they did not think they were far from their plunderers, because they had dared to travel only in the night ; and that being so weak, it was impossible but they must go very slow ; that the viscount seemed to bear this calamity with great courage, and comforted those who were about him ; but that one might easily perceive he was afflicted

fllicted to the soul ; that he had taken the pains, hitherto, to carry miss *Fanny* in his arms, to save her the fatigue of walking ; and had constantly refused to let any of his servants do it, though at the same time, they could not forbear shedding tears at the melancholy sight ; but they had been so lucky, as to get some provisions when they fled from the savages ; but that as they were not able to carry off much, they consequently would soon be spent. In fine, that when I was so well recover'd as to be able to walk, he would carry me to his lord ; who, he said, would undoubtedly be overjoy'd to see me ; that he was come by his lordship's order, to see whether it was really me, as the slave had assur'd him : That he still doubted whether this were true, not only because *Iglou* did not pronounce my name exactly ; but much more so, because of the little probability there was of my being in the *West-Indies*, as it was thought I had married *Mrs. Lallin* in *Roan*.

I was so surpriz'd at what I heard, that I continued motionless. As soon as *Mr. Youngster* had done speaking, I took him by the hand, and squeez'd it, without making him any answer : And tho' I found my self so weak, that it was impossible

possible for me to walk unsupported; I yet set out towards the place where the viscount was, holding always by *Iglou*. Mr. *Youngster* walk'd before, and we came in a very little time to a place overgrown with briars, and intermix'd with some little trees, so that it seem'd a small kind of wood. I did not see any body at my first coming into it, though I threw my eyes round me with the utmost eagerness. At last, Mr. *Youngster* having carried me round a thicket, which stood in a corner of the most tufted part of the wood; I discover'd such a spectacle as would have kill'd me at once, had I not been prepar'd for it. I found my lord stark naked, stretch'd on the grass, leaning his head languishingly on his hand. Three of his servants lay by him, who rose up when they saw me. He was going to do the same; but preventing him in the utmost emotions of passion, I threw my self at his feet, and embraced them with such an ardour as sure was never felt before. Heaven! thou knowest it! Alas! What a strange revolution then happen'd in my soul?

THE viscount did not oppose this effusion of grief and tenderness, but did not once open his lips. I lifted up my head, after

after having reclin'd it for some moments, and turn'd my eyes towards him, when I observ'd that some tears stole down his cheeks. His face was pale and wan. He also look'd upon me, but without speaking, as though he were in doubt how he should address me. This perplexity, the cause of which I easily guess'd, increas'd my anxiety, and I could not forbear venting my complaints. Alas! my lord, says I, have you quite put me out of your heart; and will you refuse me a slight mark of humanity and tenderness, after I have been in search of you all the world over, and am now come to die at your feet? Alas! what have I done to you? and whence is it that so much love or respect on my side should be productive of this hatred? I endeavour'd to proceed, but could not; such sensations as I then felt, were not to be express'd by words. My lord plainly saw that this sorrow was not fictitious, and thereupon held out his hand to me. I don't hate you, says his lordship; and am persuaded that you are sincerely touch'd with my misfortunes. Inform me, what chance has brought you into this solitary place. I gave him to understand, as well as the confusion I was in would give me leave; that what he call'd the  
effect



effect of chance, was the result of the unparalleled'd affection I bore to him and his daughter; that 'twas the effect of the despair into which his departure from *France* had thrown me; and of the unshaken resolution I had form'd, to employ the last drop of my blood in his service. I inform'd him, that I should not have staid a moment after him in *France*, had I not been imprison'd; that for six months together, I had traversed the seas and deserts of *America*, in search of him; and in bewailing my ill fate for eluding my pursuit; firmly resolv'd to spend my life in it; and to consider all the difficulties to which this expos'd me, as nothing. In a word, I explain'd matters so happily, that his lordship was persuaded of my innocence, and consequently of the injustice of his suspicions.

'Twas then I had a greater instance than ever I had met with, of the viscount's goodness and generosity. As he now no longer doubted but I was such as he wished me, he was not at all reserv'd either in thought or expression. Immediately he embrac'd me with transport, and held me for some time in his arms, without speaking a single word. Good Heavens! says he at last, thou now exercisest thy whole

whole power over me, by making me at this instant feel the extremes of grief and joy. I am the most unfortunate creature upon the face of the earth; but *Cleveland* has not betray'd me; he still loves me, and thou indulgest me the satisfaction of seeing him again! He then clasp'd me again to his breast, calling me by a thousand tender names, and bedewing my face with his tears. I also shed an abundance; and his endearing caresses melted my very soul.

I HAD till now been employ'd in justifying my self, and pitying his lordship's misfortunes; but as the latter sensation began now to prevail, my whole attention was now employ'd on the sad condition I saw him in; and this he perceived, by the mournful air with which I look'd upon him. I read in your eyes, says he, how deeply you are affected with my calamities. They are indeed extreme; and I enquire in vain for the reason, why heaven should afflict me in this manner! But I now am a little revived, added his lordship; you shall comfort me, dear son; and your presence will keep me from dying with grief. He then mention'd his daughter *Fanny* and *Mrs. Riding*. They no doubt, says he, will be overjoy'd to see

see you; but I'm afraid poor *Fanny* will survive, but a very little time, our common misfortunes; for she's now so weak that I apprehend she'll not live long. The only answer I made to these words, was, by kissing his lordship's hands, with an eagerness which sufficiently discover'd my sentiments. I understand, says he, that you're impatient to see her; and depend upon't she'll be overjoy'd to find you still love her. But as the poor girl, *Mrs. Riding* and her two women are not in a condition to be seen; I advise you, in order to save their blushes, to stay till 'tis dark. They are hard by, and I see the sun is going to set—I was oblig'd to wait, tho' it was a mortal pain to me; at the same time I cast my eyes round, in hopes of spying her. I even fancied I saw her head rise up above the grass, which held my glances fix'd, as it were, towards that part. Her features, her air, the tone of her voice; all these were present to my imagination; and transported with the pleasure I fancied the seeing her again would inspire me with; for some moments I forgot her own, and her father's sad fate, and thought of nothing but joy and felicity.

I NEVERTHELESS offer'd his lordship  
VOL. III. D during

during this interval, part of my own clothes to cover him; and desir'd that my linnen, and whatever might be of service to the ladies might be sent to them. As for myself, I had no clothes but those on my back, and a large cloak, having been oblig'd to leave the rest of my things in *Pawhattan*, in order that our horses might be loaded with nothing but provisions; but then I had got a sufficient quantity of linnen. *Iglou* was very well cloath'd, and had also a cloak; so that we had sufficient to cover my lord with the bare superfluities of our apparel, and to furnish the ladies with several things. As my coat was too little for his lordship, he accepted of my cloak, and at the same time of one of my shirts; he sent his daughter my waistcoat, *Iglou's* cloak, some linnen, and whatever might be of use to her and Mrs. *Riding*. I don't, says he, make the least scruple to accept of what you offer me, since 'tis to your father and your wife that you do this piece of service.

ALTHO' miss *Fanny* and Mrs. *Riding* would now be enabled to appear with tolerable decency, by means of the clothes we had sent them; nevertheless the viscount desir'd me not to see them till it was dark, in order to spare their blushes, which

which would necessarily arise at their first seeing me. This put my patience to the utmost trial. His lordship spent the moments, between that time and dark night, in relating the several particulars of his leaving *France*, and his arrival in the *West-Indies*; and did not conceal from me the great uneasiness, which the persuasion of my infidelity had brought upon his daughter, Mrs. *Riding* and himself; and even confess'd, that he had repented, more than once, his leaving *Europe* so soon, before he had been convinc'd of my suppos'd falshood, from my own mouth; and this, he said, was as much the result of a remaining friendship, which still pleaded strongly for me in his heart; as out of tenderness for his daughter *Fanny*, who, he assur'd me, had never enjoy'd a moment's satisfaction ever since their leaving *Roan*. In fine, he ask'd me how far I might rely upon my slave; and whether either of us were so well acquainted with that countrey, as to know the direct way to some *English* or *Spanish* settlement. I answer'd to the first part of his discourse, by the fresh marks I had given him of my gratitude and affection; with regard to *Iglou*, I desir'd his lordship to be easy, with respect to his fidelity, and assur'd



him that he was very well acquainted with that countrey. The viscount was desirous of examining *Iglou*, who answer'd very pertinently to all his questions; but as his lordship fancied we were far advanc'd towards *Carolina*, he was very much surpriz'd to find we had still near three hundred miles to go, and was vastly uneasy upon that account. He thereupon ask'd my slave with great earnestness, whether we had any thing more to fear from savages. *Iglou* reply'd, that this was just as it might happen, because those barbarians frequently change their plantations, and that some are always met with on those mountains. I observ'd that his lordship was uneasy only upon his daughter's account; and as she was as dear to me, as she cou'd possibly be to her father, I desir'd *Iglou* to get us out of danger as soon as possible. This worthy slave, after a moment's reflection, made the following proposal. I was born, says he, in the *West-Indies* among the *Abaquis*, who are a kind people, and infinitely more humane than most other savage nations. The *Abaquis* inhabit a beautiful valley which they have long been in possession of, and is not above ninety miles from this place. I'll set out thither instantly,

instantly, says he, in case you judge it proper; and will bring from thence such a posse of my countreymen, as will be sufficient to guard, and secure us from all danger. He said farther, in order that his lordship might be still more prompted to confide in him, that he was sprung from one of the best families of his nation; that he left it about five or six years before, purely out of curiosity to visit the *European* colonies; that having been taken by the *Spaniards* and sold to the governor of *Cuba*, he had met with a very gentle captivity; that he remembered he had seen his lordship in the governor's palace in the *Havana*; in fine, that he had a great affection for the *Europeans* in general, and had so high a value for me in particular, that he was ready to run the hazard of losing his life for our sakes.

THE viscount hearing him discourse in so rational and affectionate a manner, ask'd me once more, whether it were safe to trust him. I believe, says I, my lord, you may trust him as safely as myself; he was presented me by *Don Pedro* the governor, who assur'd me of his fidelity, and I myself have put it often to the trial. Upon this the viscount wanted to know, whether

whether his countrey lay wholly out of the way we were to go; whether his countreymen were altogether so humane as he had describ'd them; whether he were sure that they'd assist us; and if they always went naked like the rest of the savages. *Iglou* return'd very satisfactory answers to all these questions. He told his lordship, that if we were to go one way, we should come within thirty miles of the valley of *Abaquis*; that he was sure of obtaining whatever he should ask, not only upon account of the credit and interest of his family; but that their joy to see him again after six years absence, would be so great, that they cou'd not deny him any thing; that his countreymen were wonderfully kind and good natur'd; that with regard to their dress, they cover'd themselves in winter with the skins of beasts, but went naked during seven or eight months in the year, because of the excessive heat of the sun.

THE viscount taking me aside; I have met, says he, with so many calamities, that I know not whether I dare again put the least confidence in fortune: but, in case I cou'd think your slave was faithful, and his relation true, I then shou'd look upon what he has now told us, as a  
great

great happiness, considering the state to which we are reduc'd. Besides the dangers to which we shall be expos'd between this and *Carolina*, and the length of the way which terrifies me; it would be a prodigious pain to me to appear in any *English* settlement, in this despicable condition. In case I cou'd trust the *Abaquis*, we would go among them, and there provide ourselves with clothes and provisions; when getting a guard of resolute fellows, we should not only be secur'd against the attacks of the savages, but likewise against *Wills*, in case we should happen to meet with him. His lordship then asking me whether I approv'd the motion, I again declar'd the confidence I plac'd in *Iglou*; and told him, that I left the rest to his lordship's prudence. He then beckon'd the slave once more to him, and after making him repeat what he had before said, with several additional circumstances; he concluded by saying, that in six days or rather six nights, which was the only time we could travel with security, we might reach the valley of the *Abaquis*. The provisions we had got, would serve us till our arrival among them, so that we were unanimous to set out for that nation.

WHILST we were thus discoursing together, and that the impatient desire of seeing the dear creature, diverted my attention every moment, the day at last began to give way to the shades of night. This I observed to his lordship, who took the hint. Accordingly we went towards the place where the two ladies expected us. 'Twas not so very dark but we could distinguish objects, when I perceiv'd my enchanting *Fanny*. Alas! in what condition did I perceive her! What name shall I give the tender emotions, which so dear, so long wish'd for a charmer rais'd in my mind? And how shall I paint the grief and compassion which then seiz'd my heart?

HER women had adjusted the clothes and linnen sent to her in such a manner, that she look'd tolerably well; but her head and feet were still uncovered, and her hair hung loose about her shoulders. Miss *Fanny* sat by Mrs. *Riding*, with her head leaning on her lap. As her eyes were shut, and she did not seem to see us; says my lord, look up child, I have brought Mr. *Cleveland* to you. Miss *Fanny* then turn'd her eyes upon me; but immediately cast them on the ground with a deep sigh. I knew that she had not yet been inform'd



inform'd of my innocence; so that notwithstanding the violent emotions which then arose in my bosom, I yet continued motionless and cold in outward appearance, not daring even to throw myself at her feet. Her father, who knew easily what it was that gave occasion to her silence and my fear, gave her his hand to raise her from the ground. Come, says he, my dear; shew some little civilities to Mr. *Cleveland*; we have accus'd him unjustly, for he has always lov'd us. Upon this she stood up, when I threw myself at her feet in so passionate a manner, that this alone sufficiently explain'd my sentiments. I wou'd have kist her feet, but she prevented me; and desiring me in a very low voice to rise up, I observ'd that she shed a flood of tears, and did all that lay in her power to suppress her sighs and groans. The viscount, who was as much afflicted as myself to see her fast-flowing tears, bid me embrace her. Alas! my lord, says I, I desire no greater favour, than to be permitted to lie at her feet! when falling prostrate a second time, I protested, that I wou'd never stir from the place where I then lay, in case she did not promise to smile as propitiously as she had done before. Set your

heart at rest, says the viscount, for you may be assur'd that she loves you, and depend that we are all overjoy'd at seeing you again.

MRS. *Riding* embracing me very tenderly, gave me the same assurance. I spoke to all three one after another in the most affectionate and melting terms; and the viscount being seated, and making a sign for us to do the same; I sat down at the feet of my queen, with greater joy than I shou'd have ascended the greatest throne of the universe.

I KNOW not how it is, that the heart can shift so suddenly from one situation, to another of a quite opposite a nature; a moment sometimes produces so unaccountable a vicissitude. Is there then so little difference between the inward impulses whence grief and joy spring? Or rather, is it not in reality the same impulse, which assumes a different name according as its object and cause are chang'd? If we examine closely, we shall find that a real joy has the same symptoms as excessive sorrow. The former shall call up our tears, bereave us of our voice, diffuse a delicious languor, and make the soul meditate on the cause of its emotions; and if one man is transported

ported with joy and the other with sorrow, I know not which of the two would soonest yield to be bereav'd of the sensation he feels. With regard to myself, who cou'd not forbear bursting into tears, to see the viscount and his daughter in so deplorable a condition? I perceiv'd that they still continued to fall from my eyes, when I reflected only on the happiness I enjoy'd in seeing them again, and recovering their esteem. My eyes were still fix'd on miss *Fanny*, nor could the darkness make me lose one of her glances. I reproach'd both my dear creature and her father, but in the softest terms, for filling me with such mortal uneasiness by their unjust suspicions; and desir'd they wou'd atone for this, by loving me still more affectionately. This they promis'd to do in the most tender words; and my dear *Fanny* herself, having now a sanction from her father, and touch'd with the strong testimonies of my passion, was at last so good as to indulge my innocent caresses.

WE spent part of the night in these endearments, and being still fix'd in our resolution of taking *Iglou* for our conductor, we set out some hours before day-break towards the valley of the *Abaquis*, the

two ladies making use of our horses. We were continually about them, and so ready to do them the service we cou'd, that they suffer'd no other fatigue or inconvenience during our seven nights march, but from the jolting of the horses. We us'd to stop at day break in some shady place, and there pass the day in discoursing on our past calamities, or in taking some refreshments or sleep. I had more than once a mind to beg his lordship to fulfil the promise he had made me, that is, to give his daughter to me in marriage. This I mention'd to miss *Fanny*. Who knows, says I, what felicity heaven may still have in reserve for us? A misunderstanding expos'd me to the unhappiness of losing you, at a time when we thought our good fortune fix'd on the strongest basis. To day, some new calamity may possibly be impending, which may perhaps separate us longer than it has yet done. Alas! in case I should be torn from you before the priest has made us one!—— Alas! says I, after a moment's reflection; whether this happens before or after I am joined to you, 'twill be impossible for me to live without you. But what sweeter consolation cou'd I wish for, even in my dying pangs, than to be yours by the  
most

most sacred of all ties? Dearest miss *Fanny*, won't you consent to this? And does not your heart whisper entirely in my favour?

My enchanting creature answer'd, that I might dispose of it as I pleas'd; and that she devolv'd upon me the care of our mutual felicity, and she wish'd as earnestly for it as I cou'd possibly do. We will then, says I, be completely so very soon, and immediately directing myself to Mrs. *Riding*, I begg'd her to propose it to the viscount. She did not refuse to accept of the commission; but told me, she was afraid it wou'd meet with some difficulties; because, says she, 'tis not probable his lordship will consent to this, without your nuptials cou'd be solemniz'd in a regular way. Nevertheless, she took an opportunity of hinting this to him; and was surpriz'd to hear him say, that he had not only consider'd this, but that he had intended to propose it himself, in case we met with success among the *Abakis*.

WE perform'd our journey very happily, and being come within a small distance of the habitation of the savages, *Iglou* told us, that it wou'd be best for him to go to it alone, in order to dispose  
his



his countreymen in our favour ; and prepare them against any surprize they might otherwise be in at seeing us. I took him aside and said ; *Iglou*, you know entirely we give up our lives and liberty into your hands. I have answer'd for your fidelity to his lordship. Don't betray your master, and remember how kindly I have always treated you. *Iglou* threw himself at my feet in a transport of joy, and protested to me, that so far from deserving to be suspected ; he wou'd now evince, that he was not only entirely devoted to us, but also that the *Europeans* don't do the *West-Indians* justice, when they declare them to be, in general, brutal and savage. Saying this he left us, promising to return back quickly. Tho' my lord had propos'd our going to the *Abaquis* ; I observ'd that as he was upon the point of delivering himself up to the mercy of an unknown and savage people, he was not without dread. As for myself, being thoroughly persuaded of my slave's fidelity, I had no other fear than that which is inseparable from love, even when danger is at a distance.

*Iglou* return'd to us about noon ; he came alone, but did it purely to prevent our being alarm'd, which wou'd certainly

tainly have been, had he come with the *Abaquis* in a body. We were eager to hear the result of his good offices, upon which he told us with an air of satisfaction, that we should soon find, whether or no he was esteem'd by his countrey-men. He only gave us an account of some of their customs which were a little singular and troublesome; and desir'd us especially not to be offended, in case curiosity should prompt them to come very near us, to observe our shape and customs. He had scarce done speaking, but we saw a croud of savages, amounting to near five or six hundred, come out of the plantation. He inform'd us that the chiefs had given orders for this; and that all the inhabitants were assembled to meet us, purely to pay us a compliment. They indeed advanc'd towards the place where we were; when stopping at about fifty paces, they seem'd to wait for *Iglou's* coming, purposely that they might be instructed by him how they should act. I told him, that we had rather not have the whole company advance up to us, and that 'twou'd be enough for the chief among them to do so. Whilst *Iglou* was gone up to them, the viscount order'd his few followers to be vastly circumspect in their behaviour  
towards

towards the savages, and to treat them with the utmost civility.

UPON this about twelve or thirteen came from among the rest, and follow'd *Iglou*, when we all rose up to receive them. *Iglou* having shewn them his lordship, as the greatest man among us, they saluted him by bending their bodies, and crossing their arms in a thousand different ways. They afterwards paid me the same compliments, and afterwards to the two ladies. All this first ceremony was perform'd in silence. *Iglou* afterwards spoke in their name, and assur'd us, that they were overjoy'd to see us, and would do us all the service that lay in their power. The viscount bid him answer them that we were persuaded of their generosity and sincerity; and that 'twas from a firm persuasion of these, that we had not scrupled to come among them, to beg their assistance and friendship.

ASOON as these compliments were ended, and that they seem'd to express some confidence in us, because of the open and sincere air with which we address'd them; they caress'd us with much greater familiarity. They kiss'd our foreheads and breasts several times; they beheld us with astonishment; and methoughts I discover'd

ver'd good sense and reflection, in the manner by which they communicated their remarks to one another. Their aspect was far from being terrible. Most of the savages in this part of the *West-Indies* are tall and strait. They are tawny, but not of that kind which approaches to black. Their skin is of a deep brown; 'tis of this colour when they are born, and keeps so all their lives. They are naked, except about the waist. A certain fire sparkles in their eyes, which denotes the vivacity of their minds; and tho' there appears something savage in their air and looks, we yet cannot call it ferocity; nor does their exterior inspire the least fear. Most of them were arm'd with bows and arrows; and the heads of some were adorn'd with feathers, which were dispos'd about their hair after a very whimsical manner.

THO' they all view'd us very attentively, I yet observ'd that two gaz'd upon me more than upon any of the rest, and were particularly liberal of their caresses. *Iglou* acquainted me, that these were his father and brother. He had before told them that I was his master, and that I had treated him with uncommon indulgence; so that they strove who should shew

shew me the greatest civilities; this they continued to do, so long as I stay'd among them.

*Iglou* propos'd that we should walk into the plantation, which we consented to. He scarce had said this to the rest of the savages, but upon a signal he made to those who were not yet come up; they began to run towards us very swiftly. They now almost oppress us with their salutations and caresses. *Iglou* presented some of the women who were among them, to miss *Fanny* and Mrs. *Riding*. One of these being his sister, he desir'd I would speak to our young lady, to permit her to attend upon her continually. These women were of the same colour with their husbands, but had something softer in their countenances and about the eyes. Miss *Fanny* us'd *Iglou's* sister, whose name was *Rem*, very kindly. We now heard a confus'd murmur of words, which appear'd to us almost inarticulate; and as the testimonies they gave us of their friendship, were now so often repeated, that they began to be troublesome; I told *Iglou*, that we shou'd be glad to retire to some place, where we might escape this inundation of compliments. He told us that they had prepar'd huts for us, which  
we



we might command as our own, and that none but such as we should desire, would be allow'd access to them; but then he desir'd us to excuse the passionate warmth his countrey men shew'd, who were generally carried away by the first impressions. We were therefore oblig'd to let ourselves be carried in a very whimsical manner to the plantation. Each of us was taken up by two savages, who putting their fingers thro' one another, made us sit on their hands, which made a kind of chair; and bidding us throw our arms on each side their shoulders, and round their necks, they carried us in this posture to the plantation, which lay about 500 paces off, with surprizing swiftness. Their huts and streets were not very clean; the streets are not pav'd; but the whole plantation stands in a sandy bottom, which makes the way very troublesome in summer, because of the dust, which flies about prodigiously if the least wind blows. Their huts are made of timber, earth and flints, and are but one story high; but then they are so spacious, that one of them is generally large enough for two or three families to dwell in. None but their chiefs have a house to themselves; and one of the latter was  
got

got ready for us. We entred it with joy, purely to get rid of the croud; and tho' the chiefs went in with us, they yet had the complaisance to withdraw, when *Iglou* told them that we desir'd to take a little rest.

AND indeed the fatigues and inquietudes of this dangerous journey, made rest absolutely necessary. *Iglou* caus'd some savages, who had been order'd to attend upon us, to bring a great number of skins which they made into beds, as like those of *Europe* as possible. He was overjoy'd to do us this piece of service, as it not only gave us a testimony of his affection, but at the same time show'd the credit and authority of his family. He did not even tell us of another piece of *Indian* gallantry, that was preparing by his order, and which he intended to surprize us with. Whilst he was discoursing with us on some of the *Abaquis* customs, we saw our door open; and a dozen girls came in, carrying baskets on their heads, fill'd with roasted viands, and the best fruit of the countrey. These serv'd us, if not with magnificence, at least in a neat manner. The *Indian* maids danc'd after the repast was ended, and *Iglou* encourag'd them to trip it away briskly, thinking

thinking this was a great diversion to us. At last, I told him that we desir'd to be alone.

BEFORE we laid down to sleep, we discours'd a long time on our present condition, when my lord declar'd, that he was very glad we were come among the *Abaquis*. All that we had hitherto seen of this nation, answer'd exactly with what *Iglou* had told us of them. We were at least certain, that we might continue among them in a peaceable manner for some days. As for the guard which we wanted to *Carolina*, we did not think proper to mention it, till we were a little acquainted. *Iglou* was to procure us this favour; and we soon found, that it wou'd not be a very difficult matter for him to obtain it. Every thing, says my lord, goes on very happily; and we are infinitely oblig'd to Mr. *Cleveland* upon that account. These obliging words were to me an happy omen, with regard to my wishes for dear miss *Fanny*. The answer, I made, shew'd how agreeable they were to me; and the viscount, who took the hint, declar'd before the whole company, that his daughter should be my wife whenever I pleas'd! Gods! says I, can there be the least delay? And shall we defer to  
another

another day what may be executed this instant? You are a little too hasty, says his lordship; and have patience, at least, till day-break. I have consider'd, added he, that we have not a clergyman among us; however, I'll surrender up my daughter to you notwithstanding. The sacerdotal authority is almost unessential, when that of a father is obtain'd. The consent I shall indulge you and my blessing, will compensate for the want of the ecclesiastical function; and this we'll afterwards repair, by a more legal solemnization.

THIS positive assurance, fill'd me with the most delightful ideas that ever painted themselves in the fancy, so that I forgot all my misfortunes in an instant. I even flatter'd my self that I was now out of the power of them, and that I should henceforwards enjoy a life of happiness and tranquillity. Indeed, this delicious satisfaction was somewhat allay'd, when I consider'd the melancholy condition to which my dearest creature was reduced, and the unhappy circumstances which would attend the most happy of all events. What a festival would this be! Where were our nuptials to be solemniz'd! In the deserts of *America*, among a barbarous

barous people, unprovided with the most necessary conveniencies of life ! I was even afraid, that miss *Fanny* would be so deeply affected with the forlorn condition to which we were reduc'd, that it would be impossible for her to have a due sense of our mutual happiness ; and that this circumstance might prevent her giving me those marks of tenderness and affection, she would otherwise have indulg'd. I acquainted her with my fears in this particular, when the answer she made, confirm'd me but too strongly in the idea I had entertain'd. Alas ! says she to me, how unaccountable is our fate ! How gloomy are the auspices with regard to the consequences of our love and marriage ! Speaking these words, she grasp'd my hand, and let fall a few tears ; and I myself cou'd not forbear shuddering at the fatal omen. However, banishing such thoughts as the effect of weakness, my thoughts were now wholly employ'd, in what manner I might best console my *Fanny*. Our kindness, says I, my dear, and our constancy will at last prevail over the malignity of fortune. Nothing, says I, can terrify me, provided I am but secure of your affection. If I love you, says she, in a most melting tone of voice :

Is



Is it not a sad omen to me, that you can ever doubt of it? Alas! says she, the tears streaming from her eyes, I shall not be less unhappy than my mother. I found it a very hard task to dispel her fears and her uneasiness; and I spent part of the night in comforting her, while my lord and Mrs. *Riding* were asleep.

My charming creature's uneasiness and fears gave me so much the more pain, as I knew her to be inform'd with a masculine turn of mind, above the little fears which disturb those of the vulgar. However, as I did not foresee any thing, at least with regard to herself and me, which cou'd justly give me the least alarm; I pass'd a night, which was to be follow'd by the happiest day I was ever blest with, agreeably enough. All the cravings (as I was going to rest,) says I, of my heart will be satisfied to morrow; I shall at last obtain what I so eagerly pant after; and fortune can now have but little power over me. Wisdom shall henceforwards be my only study; and her dictates will fortify me sufficiently against the reverses of fate. Poverty, for instance, will not be able to give me a moment's pain. In case I shall be weak in any respect, 'twill be only in the affections of my heart; and

and happily for me, this is what I shall be least expos'd to, since I shall to morrow be united for ever to my *Fanny*; and have the viscount and Mrs. *Riding* for my inseparable friends. Whilst I was employ'd in these thoughts, sleep seal'd fast my eyes; and when I awak'd the next morning, my heart was fill'd with inexpressible delight.

*Iglou* hearing that our marriage was upon the point of being celebrated; endeavour'd all that lay in his power, but unknown to me, to engage his countrey-men to heighten the solemnity of it. I shall not relate the ridiculous pageantry that was display'd on this occasion, which we applauded, purposely to ingratiate ourselves still more in the affection of the savages. We were oblig'd to partake of a feast which the chiefs had order'd to be prepar'd for us; and 'twas a pleasure to the viscount to make us observe their ceremonies; and he left the direction of the whole to *Iglou's* father, who was one of the principal men of the assembly. Supper being ended, the last mention'd savage came and took me from the place where I was sitting, his daughter, at the same time, taking miss *Fanny* by the hand; and leading us both into

the middle of the room, all the spectators crouded round us in a ring. Then *Rem*, *Iglou's* sister, presented me with a kind of rope made of the barks of trees; and gave me to understand, that I must take it, and tie it round miss *Fanny's* waist. I did so, and she bid me tie the knot hard. After this, putting one end of it into my fair charmer's hand, she assisted her in putting it round me, and bound me with it also. We were now tied to one another, with about a yard of bark-rope between us. And now all the savages came up to us one after another, and seem'd as tho' they did all their endeavours to untie the knot. As each savage withdrew, he either gave a nod or spoke some words, to signify that it was not in his power to unty the knots. When they had thus seemingly attempted to unloose us by artifice, they return'd again toward us in the same order; and endeavour'd, in outward appearance, to employ their whole strength to break the bands: But failing also in this, *Iglou's* father and daughter, led us to the viscount, and said to him, as *Iglou* told us afterwards; that having found his daughter tied in the manner he saw, they had employ'd their utmost efforts to set her at liberty; but having fail'd,

fail'd, 'twas now his business to try whether he could have better success. The savages had put one of these ropes into his lordship's hand, and made signs for him to put it round his daughter and me; when he was desir'd to tie us close together, which he did; and likewise made several more knots, in those ropes with which the savages had bound us, at which they testified their applause by a great shout. Then one of them raising his voice, declar'd, that as they had endeavour'd in vain to unloose us, and since the bride's father had himself assisted in binding us, no one in the world ought to loose them hereafter; that we could not justly complain against any person, since we had voluntarily put ourselves in bonds; that 'twas manifest the sun himself had inspir'd us with this desire; that he would bless our union; and therefore we ought in gratitude to him, never repent that we had bound ourselves by these indissoluble ties.

THE *Abaquis* worship the sun, and acknowledge no other deity. We shou'd, in order to complete our marriage after their fashion, have call'd upon that planet, as a witness of the constancy of our engagements; but as the principles of our

religion were very different from theirs, I took that opportunity to swear eternal truth to my *Fanny*, in presence of heaven and her father; and she did the same by the viscount's desire. He likewise made us promise, to sanctify our marriage by the priestly mediation, the first opportunity we should meet with for that purpose; after which he gave us his blessing, with the strongest marks of tenderness and satisfaction. I thereupon threw myself at his feet, in a transport of gratitude and joy; and lay prostrate for some time, without being able to speak one word; for so unexpected a flood of happiness appear'd to me like a dream. I ask'd myself over and over, whether I was the unhappy man, whose life had been one continued series of misfortunes, and I now thought myself for ever reconcil'd with fortune.

AFTER having for some time been caress'd, and congratulated in a most whimsical manner by the savages, we return'd to our hut. The viscount, who was perfectly satisfied with the civility of the *Abiquis*, resolv'd now to propose their favouring us with a guard to *Carolina*, sooner than he first thought to have done. He was of opinion, that they wou'd sooner gratify



gratify him in his request, now their friendship was so warm, and thereupon consulted *Iglou* about it. This I left them to do, and in the mean time devoted myself wholly to love; thrice happy! thus caressing and carefs'd by my dear, dear *Fanny*.

I WAS tender and passionate, and my angel was no less so; and yet, will it be believ'd, that a night, devoted wholly to joy and the sweets of love, could be embitter'd with sorrow? Strange caprice of fortune, which never suffer'd me to taste delights, without a mixture of affliction! *Fanny* was now clasp'd in my arms, so that 'twould have been impossible for me, to imagine to myself a more delicious scene of felicity; and yet, alas! at a time when she was most profuse of her kisses, she yet vented some sighs, which too evidently show'd, her mind still labour'd under some uneasiness. I reproach'd her for it, but the answers she made were far from satisfactory. Had it been possible for me to have doubted the sincerity of her affection, I shou'd have accus'd her of indifference; but I had such proofs of her tenderness, as did not leave the least room for suspicion. I even took notice, that she was troubled she had given

me an opportunity of discovering her uneasiness; and endeavour'd to make me put a quite different construction upon her sighs. I strove, but in vain, to make her unbosom herself to the man who worshipp'd her; who wish'd only to live for her sake. She complain'd in her turn of the unjust idea I had of her tenderness, and forc'd me to conceal my anguish in my breast. It however was not less violent upon that account; and I was but too sensible that something was still wanting to complete her felicity, and consequently mine.

I SHALL not yet declare, what now involv'd me in fresh uneasiness. Tho' hardly any thing ever went nearer to my heart, yet this had been proceeded by so long a train of misfortunes; and I have so many others to acquaint my readers with, that I shall wave relating this at present.

THE fresh assurances which my lovely bride gave me of her affection were so persuasive; that these added to the proofs she had before given me of it, made me believe that I cou'd not doubt of it for a moment, without doing her the highest injustice. I therefore concluded, that these tokens of sadness, were to be ascrib'd wholly to the unhappy situation of our circum-

circumstances; and to a thousand inconveniencies, which we cou'd not be insensible to, notwithstanding the violence of our passion. I knew besides, that her complexion was naturally of a gentle, melancholly turn; and that this temper was predominant, even when she was happiest; and so far from disliking this disposition, I on the contrary was highly pleas'd that it was of this cast, because it always inclines a heart to tenderness and fidelity. I therefore contented myself with putting her in mind, that she ought not to conceal her affliction from me; since she might depend, that I wou'd do all that lay in my power, even to the hazard of my life, to soften it. She had the prudence not to let her father discover any thing of it. The next morning we were inform'd, that *Iglou* intended that day to request the *Abaquins* to favour us with a guard, and to propose our taking leave of them. We had the greatest reason to expect that he would succeed in his commission, and therefore were persuaded he would bring us favourable news. He nevertheless return'd with an air, which seem'd to speak disappointment. I am come hither, says he to his lordship, before the rest of my countrey-men, purposely to inform you

of the resolution of our chiefs, who are now coming to wait upon you. I have told them your request, and the design you have of going immediately for *Carolina*; and they seem'd to be very much afflicted upon that account, being vastly desirous that you shou'd continue longer among them. Nevertheless, after I had assur'd them that you were absolutely oblig'd to depart immediately, and that you would consider their consent as a fresh testimony of their friendship; they unanimously agreed to grant whatever you shou'd ask. With respect to a guard, as many men will be allow'd you for that purpose as you shall think proper; and as a farther proof of the affection our people have for you, they are all soliciting to be of that number. I thought, says *Iglou*, the business was happily concluded; and was preparing to come and acquaint you with my success; when one of the most antient among the *Abaquis*, propos'd a thing, which I'm sure will give you the greatest pain. 'Twas this; to suffer you, indeed, to depart, but to detain my master and mistress here: (meaning my wife and myself.) This motion, says he, was universally applauded, and they all gave a shout. 'Twas to no purpose, continued

*Iglou*

*Iglou*, that I endeavour'd to divert their design, by assuring them that you'd never consent to it; they wou'd not listen to me, and they'll come here presently in crouds, to inform you of their resolution.

THIS relation fill'd us with the highest surprize, as the reader will easily judge, so that I cou'd not forbear reproaching *Iglou*, for having involv'd us in these difficulties; and ask'd him what name he wou'd now give to his own and his countrymen's insincerity? Poor *Iglou* answer'd only by his tears, which denoted the deep affliction with which he was seiz'd. The savages appear'd a little after; I order'd *Iglou* to interpret their request to his lordship; and without waiting for an answer, they flock'd round my wife and I, in token of the joy they felt, at the thoughts that we both were to continue among them. I got loose from them, and running to the viscount, I clasp'd him in my arms, in such a manner as shew'd, that I was resolv'd not to be separated from him. We then put such expressions into *Iglou*'s mouth, as we thought would be most capable of softning them. But they did not seem to attend in any manner to what he said; and continued to sing and dance round us in a tumultuous manner,



and to kiss our foreheads and breasts with the utmost eagerness. The viscount seeing it would be a difficult matter to make them change their resolution, desir'd they would allow him some time to consider of what they insisted upon; and after we had earnestly besought them to leave us alone, they all withdrew.

It would not be a very easy thing to describe the dilemma we were now in, and the uneasiness it gave us, whereupon we held a council on this unexpected accident. Methoughts we had but one course to take; for we were resolv'd not to leave the viscount, and continue among the *Abaquis*; but then the difficulty lay, how to prevent this. *Iglou* confest to us with tears, that when once the savages take a resolution which gives them so much joy, they seldom or never change it; and are inexorable to prayers and entreaties. They, says he, have conceived a great fondness for my master and mistress; and, says he, they would think they gave the highest testimony of it, by detaining them here. But then, continued *Iglou*, directing himself to me, you may do what you please with them; you may obtain an absolute authority over them, and govern them as you shall think proper.

THESE

THESE last words, made us doubt for some moments whether or no he did not deceive us, and act a clandestine part with his countrey-men. However, we chang'd our opinion, when we found him so readily give into the proposal his lordship made. This was, to steal away in the dead of night, and go for *Carolina*; tho' at the hazard of encountring all the dangers, our coming among the *Abaquis* had made us avoid. I cou'd come at my two horses whenever I pleas'd; so that we were concern'd only about the provisions, which we imagin'd we should be scarce able to furnish ourselves with; but *Iglou* promising to do his utmost endeavours to procure us some, we were less uneasy than before. But now we plainly discover'd, that the savages were under some apprehensions of our design, and therefore had an eye upon us; and *Iglou* afterwards inform'd us, that twenty were appointed to watch us day and night; and that these, upon pretence of doing us any service we might want, wou'd be posted in the next hut to ours. This last piece of news exasperated his lordship to that degree, that had not the few attendants which were about him, been naked and unarm'd; he would have attempted to break from them

by open force. But I only had a sword and a couple of pistols, and then I had but a small quantity of powder. This made us conclude, that it would be impossible for us to get over this difficulty, or at least we were persuaded, that nothing but time and chance cou'd extricate us from it.

THE viscount was inconsolable ; for besides the uneasiness it would be to him to reside among the savages, and the wretched condition we were in ; he consider'd every moment, that this kind of captivity wou'd render him entirely useless, with regard to the affairs of his sovereign.

NOTHING afflicted him so much as this thought. The viscount spent a whole month in meditating upon our escape ; and was sometimes resolv'd to employ such arguments as he thought would have the greatest effect upon the savages. *Iglou* forwarded his designs as much as he possibly cou'd ; but at last, his lordship seeing no possibility of our succeeding this way ; and being persuaded that the difficulties wou'd increase every day ; because the longer we continued among the savages, the greater affection they wou'd have for us, he form'd such a resolution as surpriz'd us very much. I will, says he to us one day, leave you for some time,

time, and accept of the convoy of savages under the conduct of *Iglou*. I'll leave all my servants with you, and be assur'd that I wont be absent long. In case I succeed in *Carolina*, I'll return back with a force sufficient to rescue you out of your captivity; but in case my hopes shou'd be frustrated, I'll return soon, and share in your confinement. After all, says he, I don't see that you can be in any danger during my absence. 'Tis plain these barbarians detain you purely out of affection; they appear to be of a very gentle disposition; and I'll go and increase their kindness for you, by acquiescing voluntarily with their request; and by making a merit of the testimony I shall thereby give, of my esteem and the confidence I put in them. Behave, says his lordship, kindly towards them, observe their manners and customs, and they'll love and revere you more and more. And the longer I think upon this, the greater consolation it is to me, in the necessity I am under of leaving you here: You'll be much safer here, than were you to follow me in the new enterprize I am going upon.

I HAD nothing to oppose to my lord's resolutions with regard to my wife; being persuaded by the humane treatment

we met with among the savages, that we had nothing to fear from them; and I was sensible, that bating certain inconveniencies, it wou'd be infinitely less dangerous for her to continue among the *Abaquis*, than to undertake the journey of *Carolina*. But then I was divided; for I wish'd to accompany the viscount, and yet 'twas death to me, to think of parting from my *Fanny*. Will it be possible for me, says I, to see you set out, and be in doubt, whether you may return alive from the enterprize you have in view? Shall your lordship be expos'd to a thousand dangers, and not let me share them with you? Shall we not even know the place, whither fortune is going to conduct you? How gloomily will the hours pass away, since we shall be in continual alarms! and not to mention my own anxiety, how will our poor dear *Fanny* be comforted during your absence? He answer'd, that our mutual consolation would be incessantly present to us, she in me and I in her; that we were dearer to him than himself, and that he look'd upon us as his better part; and therefore, we need not doubt, but that he'd bring us back the other part as soon as possible, in order that it might be join'd to that he had left behind



behind him. My wife shed a flood of tears upon this occasion, but neither these, nor my intreaties, could prevail with his lordship to change his resolution; and he immediately bid *Iglou* desire the savages to get ready the convoy they had promised.

THIS request, and the promise he made to leave us in the plantation, were receiv'd by these barbarians with incredible joy. They left to his lordship the choice both of the number and the persons. He believ'd that an hundred men were sufficient, whom he desir'd *Iglou* to select; and resolving to wait only for the time necessary for getting up arms and provisions, when these were got ready he set out on his journey. We were oblig'd to sollicite him a long time, before we cou'd prevail with his lordship, to take, at least, half his servants along with him. He would, absolutely leave Mr. *Youngster* along with us, and two other *English* men, that had follow'd him from *Roan*, in whom he put the greatest confidence. His taking leave, and the tender manner in which he begg'd the *Abaquis* to take care of us, almost melted us. I conjur'd *Iglou*, with the utmost earnestness, to watch over the life of my dear father. We then  
saw

saw them set out. Alas! why was I not allow'd to follow his lordship? I wou'd willingly have shed the last drop of my blood to defend him. I myself wou'd have fac'd all the dangers which threaten'd him: My life cou'd only have fallen a sacrifice, and this wou'd have been nothing in comparison of the torments I was to suffer.

HOWEVER, a person was left with me, for whose sake it was natural I shou'd wish to live. Dearest creature, says I, when my wife and I were left with Mrs. *Riding*, 'tis now we shall prove, whether love alone is sufficient to form the happiness of two hearts. This is our only refuge. Mrs. *Riding* will have friendship for her consolation, and love must be ours. My *Fanny* answer'd, by a kind of involuntary impulse, alas! were I but sure that you really lov'd me! she said no more; but I took notice, that Mrs. *Riding* nodded privately, as much as to say, that she should not explain herself any farther. I contented myself at that time, with only saying with my usual tenderness, that she ought not to complain of her fate, in case she cou'd be happy in possessing a good, which she was so sure of. But tho' I did not harbour the least suspicion, upon account of these

these words, I yet could not forbear asking Mrs. *Riding* in private, if she knew what they hinted at. This lady endeavour'd to elude my uneasiness, by the soothing answer she made; and yet I could not but observe both in her air and her manner of expression, a certain constraint, which would undoubtedly have fill'd me with fears, had I been naturally of a diffident temper. However, as it was impossible for me to form any just suspicions, I did not press to her to explain this matter farther.

I thus remark, on every occasion, the only faint glimmerings I had, relating to one of the most dreadful circumstances of my life. My *Fanny* was tender and faithful; but notwithstanding these qualities which render'd her capable of a great passion, she yet wanted a very essential one, to make her happy in love. My felicity was wrap'd up in hers. Thus was she fated to make me wretched, but undesignedly; and I, to be unhappy, without meriting to be so.

THE affection of the savages increased to such a degree, when they imagin'd that 'twas by our own consent we continued among them, that they now employ'd themselves wholly in giving us continual  
proofs

proofs of it. Their first care was to adorn our hut in the best manner they could. They cover'd the walls and floors with skins. As the violent heat of the sun incommoded us very much, they transplanted several tufted trees, and set them round our house, in order that they might shade us; and finding that we were not willing to be cloathed after their manner, or rather to go almost naked; they presented us with a great number of very fine skins, which we made up into very commodious dresses. *Rem*, *Iglou's* sister, would not stir from my wife. She had so sprightly a genius, and so happy a memory, that she soon learn'd *English* enough to understand us. I likewise applied my self to the study of the *Abaquis* tongue, and made a much greater progress in it, than I at first believ'd I should. This made the savages still fonder of us; and no sooner had I began to speak their language pretty fluently, but they flock'd about me so much, that I scarce had a moment to my self. They seem'd greatly astonish'd, whenever any of my expressions suited with their notions, or raised any new reflections in their minds. Some advice I gave them, was so highly pleasing, that they would not afterwards undertake any thing

thing without consulting me. They oblig'd me, but very much against my inclinations, to be present in all their assemblies, and always gave me the most honourable place in it. I at last found, that the better I understood their language, the more authority I shou'd obtain over them ; and that it wou'd not be a difficult matter for me, as *Iglou* had foretold, to govern them as I should think proper.

HOWEVER, such an advantage as this did not any way sooth my ambition. But as his lordship had been absent two months, which gave me the highest uneasiness, because I had not once heard from him since his departure ; I therefore resolv'd to try how far I might rely on the friendship and submission of the *Abaquis*. I communicated this resolution, and the motives of it, to my dear *Fanny*. She approv'd one of them, *viz.* the desire I had of gaining so great an ascendant over the minds of these savages, as to make them subservient to his lordship's interest ; or at least, to prevail with them to go and enquire what was become of him. With regard to the second motive, which arose from the tender regard I had for my wife ; and which was only to secure my self daily more and more, against the inconstancy  
of



of the savages; she told me, that she could have wish'd I had taken such a method as might have preserv'd the affection they had for us, but without increasing it. Her reflection was very just; for to judge of the time to come, by what had already happen'd to us; we must naturally conclude, that the more they loved us, the more difficult it would be to get away from them. However, I observed to my wife, that our fears for things remote, ought not to make us neglect the present advantage, which my authority over them presented me with; that in case I could once be made their chief, I should then be in a condition, not only to do her father the greatest service, but even his majesty; that the *Abaquis* were a numerous and brave people; that in case I could but make them tolerably perfect in military discipline, I did not doubt but I should be able to form a considerable body, and by that means perhaps make my self fear'd in the *West-Indies*; and I concluded with saying, that this was the only way left us to know what was become of, and succour, his lordship.

Besides, that my love for, and the confidence I plac'd in my wife, would not  
suffer

suffer me to conceal any thing from her; I was prompted by a weighty reason to reveal my designs to her. I had observ'd, that a savage of the greatest credit among the *Abaquis*; and whose opinion generally prevail'd in their publick assemblies, used to be extremely assiduous about her. The reader will easily believe, that jealousy had not made me discover this; but I was perswaded, that in case this *Abaquis*, whose name was *Moou*, would but endeavour to make his countrey men chuse me for their head, they'd yield to his request, without the least opposition. I had before founded *Iglou's* father, who also was a person of great credit; and found that he was entirely devoted to my interest. I therefore bid my wife hint artfully to *Moou*, that the experience and understanding I had acquired in *Europe*, might prove of the greatest advantage to the *Abaquis*. She play'd her part so well, that *Moou* acquiesced at once with her reasons; and thereupon employ'd all his rhetoric, to bring his countrey men over to his opinion. After this, he acquainted my wife with what he had done; and two days after he came unknown to us, to the door of our hut, probably to make a merit of his zeal; accompanied with the greatest part  
of

of the inhabitants; who pronouncing my name with a great shout, entreated me to take the government into my hands. I affected to discover some doubt at the proposal they made; however, this only increased the ardour of the savages, who at last wou'd have us'd compulsion, had I not told them aloud that I accepted of their generous offer. I nevertheless added, that it shou'd be upon one condition. As I shall use my utmost endeavours, says I, to promote the publick good, and make you a happy and flourishing nation; I believe I may with justice require you, to take a solemn oath of obedience to me. They all answer'd, with great acclamations, that this should be done with pleasure. I then gave them my word, that I would employ all the care and skill I was master of, to settle their government on such a foundation, as should soon raise them a reputation superior to any other people in the *West-Indies*. I appointed a general assembly the next day; and dismissing the multitude, I invited the chiefs into my hut, in order to settle some points, relating to the publick concerns.

As I now accept of the supreme authority which you have been pleased to offer me, I expect to enjoy it in an absolute manner.

manner. But I'll never, says I, require any thing at your hands, which I have not first prov'd to be just and necessary; in which case, my commands must be punctually obey'd. I then desired to know the form and tenor of their oaths, and how I might engage them to be obedient. They told me, that the *Abaquis* look'd upon the sun as an all-powerful and formidable deity; and that I might rest assured, they'd never attempt to break any engagements, for which they had call'd upon his testimony; and that the fear of the terrible punishment, which the sun had inflicted on their ancestors for their perjury, kept them inviolably faithful and submissive. They afterwards told me a great number of idle and incoherent stories; such as are invented by imposture, and increas'd by superstition, in false religions. 'Twas not my interest to undeceive them; on the contrary, I was persuaded that their simplicity would be of the highest advantage to me; and therefore resolv'd not to enlighten their minds, till some time after.

ANOTHER precaution I took, was, to ask whether any of their neighbours were as tractable and humane as themselves; in which case, says I, they shall be invited

to join themselves to us; and if this can be obtain'd, we then shall increase our strength considerably, and settle our government on a more lasting basis. I had before heard, that the *Abaquis* did not consist of above six thousand, including even several small habitations which were join'd in amity with them, and were not situated at a very great distance from the chief town where we liv'd. They answer'd, that they had no other neighbours but the *Rouintons*; that 'twas not possible to enter into an alliance with, or have the least correspondence with them; they being so barbarous a people, that nothing was to be expected from them but hostilities and insults; that they had been enemies to the *Abaquis* from time immemorial, and from this only reason, *viz.* that humanity and cruelty can never agree; that there seldom past a year but some bloody battle was fought, which weaken'd both nations considerably; that the *Abaquis* having been victorious in the last engagement, their barbarous enemies had been so much weaken'd, that there was no probability they would be able to make head against them for a long time; however, that those who had escap'd from the slaughter, breath'd nothing but vengeance;



they undoubtedly would appear again in the field, as soon as they had an opportunity for doing it.

These words gave me an occasion to ask them, whence it happen'd that the nation of the *Abaquis* were so few in number, as well as most of those who inhabit that wide-extended part of the *American* continent. I had before consider'd this often, but with great surprize; for it was a mystery to me, that a healthy and vigorous people, who had so long inhabited a valley, whose air and fruits were so excellent, should have multiplied so little.

THEY answer'd, as follows. The first reason, said they, was the wars in which they were almost perpetually engag'd with the neighbouring people; which seldom ended, till one of the two nations was almost cut to pieces; inso-much that the vanquish'd could scarce repair their losses under fifty years; and I since heard, that 'tis the same with most of the other people of *America*. The *Abaquis* answer'd in the second place, that they had almost made it a law, not to extend themselves beyond the limits of their valley, because all the parts adjacent to it, were sandy and barren; so that in case they should happen to be over-

stock'd with inhabitants, they then would send such of them as were superfluous, to settle in some other place.

I LIKEWISE spent part of the day in getting from these honest savages all such lights, as might be of service to the employment I had accepted of. I above all endeavour'd to win these particularly over to my interests, by promising that I would consult them often, in the same manner I did then; and to give 'em the highest marks of my esteem and confidence on all occasions. I paid a particular distinction to *Moou* and *Iglou's* father, and appointed them to regulate the ceremonies next Day. Old *Iglou* was a man of excellent natural sense; and I had frequently observ'd that he was capable of reflection, which few of the savages are. Besides, the great affection which his son had for me, and the earnest request he had made his father at his setting out, to be careful of my welfare; made him extremely solicitous to oblige me so far as he was able. I therefore resolv'd to have him always near me; and to leave to his care, as tho' he had been my prime minister, a multitude of things which I my self could not execute. With regard to *Moou*, as his mind was of a less peaceable and judicious turn,

turn, I propos'd to employ him in other things, which suited better with his inclinations. I was oblig'd to pay him some distinction; not only as he had done me signal service, but because he was so much respected, and of so daring a temper; that had I neglected him, he might easily have disconcerted all my measures; and by the same reason, was able to do me very great services, in case I could attach him to my interests.

HAVING spent the rest of the time alone, in meditating on the order I should establish among my people; I went the next day to the place of the assembly, which was in a spacious meadow, at some distance from the habitation. I could not help admiring, as I went along, the inclination which all men have to flatter those whom they look upon as their superiors. I could not ascribe either to self-interested or ambitious views, the eagerness with which the savages strove to approach me, and their great endeavours to please me; for being unacquainted with riches and honours, they consequently neither hoped for, nor desired them. 'Twas therefore in these barbarians a natural impulse, which arose merely from a reflection that they were going to see me rais'd above them;

and in a station which they began to fear and respect, though they themselves had promoted me to it. I am so much the more pleas'd with this idea, because the propension which all men have to submission and dependence, seems to me a strong indication of the power of the supreme being, who has made them such as they are; and hereby points out to them, not only that they are under the direction of a supreme being, but likewise that they ought to revere him above all things.

THE assembly who were impatient for my coming, broke into one universal shout the instant they saw me. *Moou* and old *I-glou* had plac'd the several persons according to their rank; and had prepar'd a place for me, whence I might be seen by all the spectators. I had permitted them, a little before I came out of our hut, to cover my head with feathers. I carried an arrow over my shoulder, and had a quiver by my side; and as I was now to be seen for the first time by a great number of *Abaquis*, and several other people who, as was before observed, form'd one body with them; and were come from their habitations, in order to take an oath of allegiance to me; I endeavour'd to assume such an air as might prejudice them in my  
favour.

favour. The instant I made a signal that I desir'd to be heard, they were all silent. I had studied my speech, and 'twas adapted so as to please. I laid before them, in what manner I had been desir'd to accept of the administration: I declar'd how averse I was to any thing of that nature, and in what manner I had at last been forc'd to acquiesce with their desires. I declared that this was not out of any reluctance I had to govern them, for I assur'd that I heartily wish'd them well; that I would render them happy and peaceable, and make the *Rouintons* their enemies, stand in fear of them: But I was afraid, that as they were used to live in a state of independence, they cou'd hardly prevail with themselves to obey me: I therefore cou'd not resolve to accept of the authority they offer'd, unless they would swear by the sun to obey all my commands; and was afraid I shou'd expose them to grievous punishments, in case they shou'd forswear themselves; and thereupon I set before them the several fabulous examples which had been told me, concerning the terrible effects of the sun's anger. I added others to these, and heighten'd them with such circumstances as were most capable of inspiring terror;



giving all the force I possibly cou'd to my voice, my gestures and my countenance. My principal view in all this was, to make them consider the oath they were going to take as very sacred. This was the only tie by which I cou'd bind them; and I was persuaded, by what was told me the day before, that 'twas the only method to keep them in their allegiance. I concluded therefore with asking them, whether they were dispos'd to take an oath of obedience; or in other words, to make themselves obnoxious to the most dreadful punishments, in case they should refuse to obey any of my commands.

I HAD express'd my self in such strong terms, when I mention'd the punishment they had to dread; that I was afraid, as I ended my harangue, it had made too strong an impression on them, and therefore wou'd lessen the affection they had for me. The whole assembly continued for some moments in silence, as though they had been divided betwixt desire and fear. However, after I had repeated what I requir'd of them, in a much softer tone of voice, they recover'd their spirits; and declar'd by their shouts, that they were extremely desirous of seeing me their chief and their governour.

I THEN

I THEN made a sign to old *Iglou*, and the principal men of the assembly; to begin the ceremony. I expected they would have set up an altar, and accompany their oath with some superstitious and idolatrous practice; but was greatly pleas'd to find, that it consisted merely in the worship they paid to the sun. I did not observe any priests among them, or the least religious pomp. The whole consisted in acknowledging the planet of the day as the supreme being, and every one was left at liberty to worship him as he thought fit, without being oblig'd to submit himself to any regular method, or assembling with others for that purpose. This persuaded me that the oath was consequently not administred with any regularity; and in order to make it so, I desir'd old *Iglou* to dictate what I desir'd to hear them pronounce one after the other. The chiefs thereupon came near me, and repeated slowly what *Iglou* bid them say. All the rest advanced in their turns, without the least noise or hurry. I admir'd their modest behaviour, and imputed it to nothing but the great respect and veneration they have for the sun. The ceremony lasted the remaining part of the day, and was perform'd with the

same silence. I now entertain'd a more advantageous idea than ever of the character of so religious a people, and did not doubt but I should be able to civilize them, and be very successful in my government.

WHAT persuaded me still more, that their great decorum during the whole ceremony, proceeded from a regard they have for religion, was, the tumults they made the moment it was ended. It would be a hard matter for me to describe their transports, and the testimonies they gave of their joy, for I cou'd not so much as be heard a moment. I was reconducted to the habitation with such extraordinary shouts and acclamations, that the first occasion I had to exert my authority, was to give orders that they shou'd cease. I then shut my self up in my cabbin with my family, who were uneasy at my long absence; and desir'd the savages to let me take a little rest.

*Youngster* advis'd me, in order to complete the establishment of my power, to chuse by old *Iglou's* direction, a certain number of faithful savages to serve me as a guard, and execute all my commands; but I did not approve of the hint. There were, says I, but two motives which prompted

prompted me to take the administration into my hands. The first was, to do the viscount service, and forward, if possible, the king's designs; now I don't see how a guard can any ways contribute to this. The second motive was, to employ all my endeavours to cultivate the minds of these savages; and to convince them of the folly of their idolatrous worship, and instil into their minds some ideas of morality and discipline; now I don't see of what service a guard can be in this respect. In a word, says I, to *Youngster*, I have no design to set up an empire in this countrey, much less to introduce an arbitrary form of government. In case heaven shou'd oblige me to reside longer among the *Abaquis* than I should desire to do; I shall not make them feel my authority, either by my haughtiness or severity. I will on the contrary do all that lies in my power to make them happy. But the only thing I want your advice in, says I, is to think of some methods how we may do the viscount immediate service; and to hear, in the first place, what is become of him. Let us first weigh this matter, before we require any thing from the savages.

WE discours'd a long time on this important subject. Mrs. *Riding* and my wife being present at the conference, they likewise communicated their hints. *Youngster* offer'd to set out for *Carolina*, but then he was wholly unacquainted with the way; and 'twas not probable he cou'd be able to find it without a guide. As for the *Abaquis*, they seldom went beyond the limits of their valley; and the long journies of my slave *Iglou*, was a thing unheard of among them. In the whole, we concluded, that nothing less than a miracle could extricate us from the difficulties we then labour'd under. I had some knowledge of astronomy, and I consider'd that this would inform me how we were situated with regard to *Carolina*; but then the practice of the rules of the above mention'd art, is very difficult and uncertain. The proportions of distance between the celestial bodies, and the lines and circles which correspond to them on the earth, cannot be found but after a very general manner; and the least error must put a man very much out of his way, in so wide-extended a countrey as that we were in. Nevertheless, as this was the surest course I could take, I at last resolv'd to take five or six of the boldest



boldest and most sturdy savages; to sooth these up with a thousand fine hopes, and to send them towards the sea-coast whatever might be the consequence of it. I argued in the following manner. Tho' I cou'd not naturally hope, that it would be possible for them to reach *Carolina*, yet chance might happen to conduct their steps to that countrey. But supposing they should wander so far out of their way, as I was afraid they wou'd; I yet thought, supposing they observ'd the directions I gave them, that 'twas impossible but they must reach *Virginia* in case they went too far to the left; or the peninsula of *Tegesta*, in case they advanc'd too far to the right. Now, in both these countries, they wou'd infallibly meet with some *European* colony. I intended to give them a letter, written in three different languages, viz. in *English*, *French* and *Spanish*; no other nations having any settlements on these endless coasts. The purport of my letter, was to entreat those into whose hands it might fall, to treat the bearers with humanity; and to acquaint me, in writing, what they had heard of my lord, and whether or no he had succeeded in his enterprize. This scheme appear'd to me the more rational,

because I imagin'd we were at above an hundred leagues from the sea: As I judg'd from the distance from *Riswey* to *Paw-batan*, and from the last town to the valley of the *Abaquis*.

*Youngster*, who had a great veneration for the viscount, begg'd I wou'd let him accompany the savages: but as I did not perceive that this would be of any advantage to us; and foreseeing that I should want him for certain affairs relating to my wife, I absolutely insisted upon his staying with us. As soon as I was fix'd in this resolution, I sent for old *Iglou*, who coming in, I bid him chuse out for me six of the most couragious and most judicious among the *Abaquis*. These being brought not long after, I employ'd all the arguments I cou'd think of, to animate their zeal and their bravery. These savages thought the confidence I put in them so great an honour, that they seem'd ready to go upon any enterprize whatsoever. I then began to give them such instructions as might be necessary for their journey; and in order to prevent their mistaking, I sent for them into my hut during three days successively, when I inculcated over and over what I had to say. At last they set out with my letter, taking

ing what provisions they cou'd conveniently carry. Their departure sooth'd our inquietude, and we begg'd earnestly of heaven to grant them success.

THE life we afterwards led among the *Abaquis*, wou'd have been agreeable enough, had our minds been ever so little susceptible of joy. But my wife, who was still prey'd upon by a continual sorrow, seem'd insensible to every thing which cou'd contribute to lessen it. It was impossible for me to be easy, when I saw her so dejected. I have before observ'd, that I did not in any manner mistrust her love: and her heart was full of me. 'Tis impossible for artifice to impose upon a tender and passionate husband. As I was continually with her, had she discover'd the least coldness, it cou'd not have escap'd the observation of so vigilant a love as mine—— No— she ador'd me: and the circumstance which cut me to the soul, was, that notwithstanding her great fondness for me, she yet seem'd to desire something, the want of which was a deadly pain. After having long endeavour'd in vain, to make her reveal the cause of her affliction, I at last began to conclude, that it was in a great measure owing to her complexion; or  
perhaps

perhaps arose from her laying our misfortunes too much to heart; but then several things I frequently observ'd, gave me reason to think otherwise. Whenever I would reproach her in the most tender expressions for her perpetual melancholly; whenever I would endeavour to dispel it by the strongest protestations of loving her eternally, and clasping her with redoubled transports to my bosom; she generally would let fall a few tears, which fill'd me with the highest uneasiness. She would first seem to melt as she gaz'd; when her eyes would be fix'd upon me, with an air of curiosity and inquietude; as tho' she wish'd to discover something in mine, which she could not perceive. The fear I was under of displeasing her, would not suffer me to be over pressing in my enquiries; but then her disquiet was not less painful to me; and what made my case still more deplorable, was, that as I did not know the nature or the cause of her anguish, I therefore cou'd not either explain, or set any bounds to mine.

I FLATTER'D myself, that the cares of the administration, in which I desir'd her to share with me, might banish in a great measure the gloom which sat upon her spirits. I myself, my dear, says I,  
will

will manage all affairs relating to the male part of the inhabitants; and will desire you and Mrs. *Riding*, to do the same with regard to those of your own sex. This she consented to, when I gave her full power to act herein as she shou'd think proper; and thereupon I caus'd publick notice to be given by a cryer, that all the women should obey her as their queen.

WITH regard to myself, I thought it would be proper for me to begin by first securing the tranquillity of the publick. This article was of as great consequence to us, as to the *Abaquis*. The relations I daily heard of the cruelty of the *Rouintons*, gave me a terrible idea of those inhuman savages, whose countrey was not above thirty miles from us. These, wou'd I say, may fall upon us the next moment; so that I soon resolv'd to put ourselves in a condition not to fear their attacks. Accordingly, I caus'd a trench fifteen foot deep to be dug round our plantation; and obliging all the savages to work at it, not excepting the women; I also put my hand to the oar, in order to quicken their diligence. As near five thousand people were employ'd continually in digging this trench, we finished it in less than a fortnight. We were now  
quite



quite furrounded with water; and for our greater security, I wou'd not allow of any communication with the countrey, except by moveable bridges, which were laid down in the morning, and taken away at night by certain savages appointed for that purpose. The whole nation seem'd prodigiously pleas'd with the invention. Nothing can be a greater indication of the stupidity of the *American* savages, than their wanting industry, even for their own preservation, tho' one would think, nature alone should have dictated it. They seem, in this respect, to be very near upon a level with brutes: for their only method in war, consists in throwing themselves impetuously one on the other, and fighting with fury, till such time as those who are weary or wounded, are forc'd either to yield, or to take to their heels.

BEFORE my undertaking any thing for the service of the *Abaquis*, I had long meditated on the change I shou'd bring about, with regard to their way of living and their dress. 'Tis so shocking a spectacle for an *European*, to see men, women and children, go continually naked, without the least regard to modesty, that I resolv'd at once they should be cover'd. This I saw might be easily effected, not only because they were provided with a  
multitude

multitude of tygers skins, of those of leopards and other wild beasts, which they kill'd in hunting; but because they always were cloath'd in winter; so that the business was only to make them preserve that custom in summer. Nevertheless, after having reflected more deeply on this affair, I thought proper to change my resolution. With regard to modesty, which was the only reason why I wish'd they would wear clothes; I considered that this wou'd not outweigh the inconveniences which wou'd inevitably arise from it. In reality, the shame of appearing naked is not inspir'd by nature; it arises merely from prejudices of education, and is the bare effect of habit. Of this I had an unanswerable proof in my savages, who did not blush at their nakedness; and even look'd upon this custom as a thing of an indifferent nature. Why, would I say to myself, shou'd I attempt to banish that innocent simplicity, in which they have hitherto liv'd? So far from it, methoughts they follow'd therein the more immediate and more just inspirations of nature. This great principle, as soon as the weather grows cold, suggests that their bodies ought to be cover'd: and on the other side, heat makes them look upon clothes

in

in summer, as superfluous and incommo-  
dious. In case I shou'd oblige them,  
(wou'd I argue to myself) to be cloath'd  
in all seasons of the year, they'll soon  
find that I do this from some other view,  
than barely satisfying our natural wants;  
they'll soon look upon their dress as orna-  
ments; they'll, in a little time, study  
neatness and taste in it, and this will im-  
mediately set their minds at work; this  
will give rise to affectation, to modes,  
and the several ridiculous effects of vani-  
ty and self-love, of which there are so  
many miserable examples in *Europe*. I  
am therefore resolv'd, not to inform  
them of any thing but what may contri-  
bute to their real advantage; but it wou'd  
be doing 'em a very ill office, were I to  
set their innocent rusticity in a ridicu-  
lous light; and open a way which leads  
to luxury and effeminacy.

I ARGUED much after the same man-  
ner with regard to their food and habi-  
tations. Their eatables were gross and  
wretchedly dress'd: These consisted wholly  
of the insipid flesh of the several animals  
they kill'd in the forests; and they ne-  
ver thought one better than the other.  
Nevertheless, their woods were stock'd  
with a great quantity of game of various  
kinds,

kinds, and their rivers and ponds with excellent fish; but they could much more easily kill a wild ox or a goat with their arrows, than a partridge or a pheasant; and nature prompted them, to employ always the most simple and easy methods. They were, moreover, of a robust complexion, and 'twas very rare to hear of consumptions, or other languishing diseases among them. I therefore believ'd, that to introduce among them the pernicious use of sauces and ragouts, would be very prejudicial. If 'tis an unhappiness to mankind, that their organs change, and that they stand in continual need of aliments to repair them; those are most happy, who procure the latter with the least trouble and expence.

WITH respect to their huts, tho' they were neither beautiful nor regular, they however were commodious. They guarded sufficiently against the inclemencies of the weather; and a man might sleep as securely in them, as under gilded roofs. What can man want or desire more, who knows that this globe we tread, is not a lasting habitation for him? What necessity is there for building houses, which may last longer than ourselves? Is it not an unhappiness that our infirmities should oblig

oblige us to live, hid for the greatest part, under the covert of a roof; which by that means deprive us of the sight of the sky; the most glorious, the most beautiful spectacle in nature? and yet, we cannot forbear building these kind of prisons to immure ourselves in. But then reason does not suggest that we should adorn our houses in such a manner, as to make them still more agreeable.

THE only change I therefore resolv'd to bring about among the savages, related to religion and morals; and the first of these articles was not to be attempted at once. 'Tis well known, that men are strongly carried away by the prejudices, which they imbibe in their infant years. I therefore thought it would be proper to watch for a proper opportunity, when the minds of the *Abaquis* might be more capable of receiving strong and durable impressions. But this will be better shown by the effects. Till this happy juncture might be found, I apply'd myself at one and the same time, to the establishment of good laws without; and the settling in families, such principles of order and subordination, as form the strongest ties of society.

ALTHO' the *Abaquis* were not as rude and ignorant,



ignorant, as several other *American* nations; and possessed a few marks of humanity, and some little knowledge of the laws of nature; I yet had observ'd among a great many of their usages, such barbarous singularities, as inspir'd me equally with horror and compassion. 'Twas a custom, for instance, among them, as soon as a child was born; to examine carefully, whether it discover'd the least symptoms of a crazy constitution, or that any of its limbs were distorted. Such as came into the world with any of these natural defects, were immediately sacrific'd. Besides this abominable practice, which caus'd the destruction of a numberless multitude of innocent creatures; they had likewise another, which was to observe, five or six days after the birth, whether they cou'd not discover on the faces of those infants who appear'd with all the signs of health, some little marks of a sickly complexion. They had their happy and unhappy symptoms; and likewise unmercifully put to death all such as had not the former. These several particulars consider'd, 'tis no wonder they were so thin of people. I endeavour'd to set the inhumanity of this conduct in the strongest light; and after my arguments had  
made

made some impression on them; I issued out my orders, by which all parents were commanded henceforwards, not to put any of their children to death, upon any pretence whatsoever.

THE families were separated one from the other; and except that now and then two or three who agreed to live together for particular reasons, each had their hut apart; and procur'd, by the labour of their hands, whatever might be necessary for their subsistence. But then, notwithstanding this union, they had but a very faint idea of the ties of blood, and the reciprocal duties of relations. A son was not oblig'd to pay the least respect to his father, who on the other side did not expect or require any from his children. A young *Abaquis* had no sooner attain'd the age, when persons can shift a little for themselves, but he became independent; and was upon a level, not only with the old men, but his parents. They had not so much as any appellation, to distinguish the quality of father; so that most children had no more regard for their parents, than for any other indifferent person. However, we here and there met with one, who was prompted by nature to pay them a peculiar veneration; and

and among these was *Iglou* and his whole family. Never did I see so beautiful an example of friendship, and perfect union among relatives. It was no difficult matter for me to distinguish such as resembled them, and accordingly I us'd all my endeavours to attach these to my person; being persuaded, that those who were inform'd with these amiable sensations of nature, would prove the most faithful. But a circumstance which surpriz'd me, was, to see so general a concord prevail in every family, notwithstanding the great independence in which they liv'd. Quarrels and divisions were seldom heard of among them, which I imputed to two causes; first to the bent of their minds, which was naturally humane, and consequently abhorrent of cruelty and violence; and secondly, to their common dread of the *Rouintons*, which oblig'd 'em to stand incessantly upon their guard; who, in case the *Abaquis* were divided, might easily overpower them.

NEVERTHELESS, in order that I might establish their peace and union, on a more solid foundation; I explain'd to them those natural duties, which subject children to the will of their parents, in a certain degree. I prov'd to them, that

as

as they were oblig'd to love one another, because they were countreymen, and united by one common interest; they still ow'd something more immediately to those to whom they were indebted for their birth, and the care of their infant years; that a change of countrey, might dissolve those ties that bound them to the society of which they had been members; but that nothing could disengage them from the obligations they ow'd their parents; that when they advanc'd in years, they did not, upon that account, owe less obedience to their fathers; since had it not been for these, they wou'd never have come into the world; that they ought not to look upon this obedience as a hardship, since nothing was requir'd from them, but what was just and rational; and lastly, that there was a time, when children would have their turn, and be respected by their off-spring with the same filial piety.

ON the other side, I inculcated to parents, that they ought to keep the authority they exercis'd over their children, within proper bounds; and behave with the utmost kindness and humanity towards them: that what right soever nature, and the regulations I intended to establish among them,

them, might give them over their children; they yet ought not to exercise it merely out of selfish views; but for the good of their children, and the general advantage of the nation; that they themselves, as fathers, were bound by several obligations, which I shou'd take care to point out to them; that the duties of parents were, an uninterrupted assiduity, wisdom, goodness and patience; and those of children, respect, love, and submission to, the person who gave them birth. I did not barely explain these maxims to them in publick, but visited every family in particular, to whom I inculcated them over and over; and I forbore to make them put these maxims in practice, till such time as I had made them confess, that life would thereby become more agreeable, their union stronger, and the exterior form of their society more agreeable.

WHEN their minds were thus happily disposed to receive this great change, which I look'd upon as the most essential part of my design; I establish'd such an order as I imagin'd could most easily be observ'd, and was best adapted to continue. With regard to each family, I appointed that the oldest person in it shou'd



be consider'd as head, unless he were incapable of governing; for which, reason should be given before a superior tribunal, who was to pronounce upon it. All the rest of the ranks were, in like manner, to be regulated according to seniority. I did not think it just, to exclude women from those privileges which were indulg'd the other sex, since nature gives these the same right to them, as she does us; and in case the authority of fathers over their children, is grounded chiefly on the obligations which these have to them, for their birth and education; one wou'd think that the mothers shou'd have the greatest power, since these suffer the most upon the two occasions abovementioned. I therefore enacted an irrevocable law, by which it was ordain'd, that the women should have the same authority over those of their own sex as the men.

BUT as this injunction seem'd to relate to the several families in themselves; I immediately establish'd a body or council, the members whereof are not to be above twenty in number; and made choice of such for that employment, as I had found the most judicious and rational. Tho' I did not exclude the women from it, I yet thought proper to make certain restrictions

strictions on that occasion. As my design in this establishment, was, to raise it to a supreme tribunal, on which all my authority might devolve, when I should leave this nation; I did whatever lay in my power, to render it as awful and august as possible. The first statute I enacted, with respect to the choice of the members, related to their age. No man under forty, nor no woman who was not full fifty, were allow'd to be admitted members of that council. The inequality between the age of the men and that of the women, was not any way injurious to the latter; it being founded on the same reason which prompted most legislators to reserve to one sex, the cognizance and management of all publick affairs; that is, on the inconvenience of child-bearing, to which nature has subjected women till they come to a certain age; and on the care they are to take, in the nourishing and bringing up their children. But then as they are rid of these troubles at fifty; and that I cou'd not perceive any reason why at that age, they should be less capable of governing than we; I therefore resolv'd they should divide it equally with the men. I am sensible, that your insipid ral-

liers, and such as are enemies to that amiable sex, ascribe this almost general custom, of not allowing women any part in the administration, to other causes, viz. to their weakness and ignorance. But then several instances I myself saw among the *Abaquis*, prov'd the injustice of such an assertion. Their women are not under the least constraint; and being educated after the same manner as the men, were as rigorous and prudent as they cou'd be; which is a pretty strong proof, that the reason why they are less so in most other countries, is, because men act a tyrannical and unjust part over them; by obliging them, against the order of nature, to apply themselves to things which enervate their minds; and by that means usurp an authority over them, which they ought to share mutually.

BESIDES a stated age, the several candidates were oblig'd to bring testimonies of their having led a regular and irreproachable life. Altho' the *Abaquis* had hitherto liv'd, in some measure, without laws or religious worship; they yet were able to distinguish justly between virtues and vices. Gentleness, fidelity with regard to promises, and temperance itself, were highly esteem'd among them; and yielded

yielded only to boldness and bravery, which they consider'd as the most supreme qualities. Old *Iglou* was esteem'd for the former, and *Moou* for the latter. I enacted, that every member of the council, should, at least, be possess'd of the former qualities. When any place was vacant, every family was appointed to pitch upon some person of either sex, whom they thought qualified to fill it; and out of these the members were to elect one, whom they thought proper to associate into their body.

MOREOVER, this council had two provinces. The first was the cognizance and administration of all the affairs relating to the nation. The counsellours were to assemble on stated days, and to confer on all things which related to the good of the publick. This burthen I indeed, was willing to ease them of, so long as I resided among them; but then I was desirous they should acquire a habit, by insensible degrees, of managing the publick affairs; in order that they might be the readier to continue the direction, after I was gone. This humane, but ignorant people, requir'd something of a simple kind; and at the same time so visibly useful, that they themselves might perceive the

advantageous difference between the condition to which I wanted to raise them, and that in which they were in, at my coming among them.

THE second province of these counsellors, was to inspect the several families in particular. I divided the whole nation into twenty parts, which answer'd to the number of the members of my council. Each counsellor was to live in the district or ward, over which he should be appointed to preside; was to enquire exactly into all irregular proceedings or disorders that might happen in it; and make his report to the council, who were to pronounce sentence. It may perhaps be thought, that as this tribunal consisted of no more than twenty persons; and that these were to superintend not only the publick affairs, but all those of a private nature, I consequently laid too heavy a burthen upon their shoulders; but to answer this, it must be consider'd that a nation of savages, who went naked, and were uninform'd with ambition or avarice, had very few disputes; and if we except a few quarrels, which might now and then arise by chance; scarce any cou'd exercise, in any considerable degree, either the wisdom or penetration of the council.

WITH



WITH regard to laws, I did not think it convenient to establish a great number of these. Those of nature suffic'd; and the most important part of them was included in the order I had establish'd among families. Live, says I to them, in unity; be as candid and humane towards others, as you desire they should be to you: This was the only law I desir'd to inculcate to the *Abaquis*, and endeavour'd to prove to them the necessity of observing it. I nevertheless appointed punishments for certain crimes; rewards and distinctions for great actions; abolish'd certain superstitious customs in their assemblies; and above all, made some useful regulations, with regard to the beasts they kill'd in the chace, which was the only thing that sometimes created divisions and feuds among them.

HAVING enacted these different particulars in three days, and the savages discovering such a docility, as gave me reason to hope that I should hereafter succeed in all my undertakings; I form'd another design, the execution of which would perhaps have appear'd more difficult at first sight. I consider'd, that in case the supporting and strengthening the subordination I had settled in the several families,

lies, should cost me some pains; the obstacle would not arise so much from the old men, who would find their account in the obedience of their children; as from the young people, who naturally hate dependance, especially in a barbarous nation, among whom an excessive liberty prevail'd. I therefore resolv'd to employ the young *Abaquis* in some exercise, which might serve at one and the same time, to keep them employ'd, and accustom them insensibly to the yoke; and for this I had a natural pretence, viz. the fear they were under of the *Rouintons* their enemies. I told them, that I was under no dread of those formidable, as they took them to be, neighbours; and that it wou'd be an easy matter for me to check their fury, and even to extirpate the whole nation; but then, that I must first teach them how to attack their enemies, and defend themselves; that in case they took some pains, upon this occasion, I would make them invincible; that this was the most important secret I had brought with me from *Europe*; to conclude, that it was necessary the young people shou'd leave the chase for some time, and devote themselves wholly to the practice of my instructions. I was oblig'd to make use of all these

these precautions, otherwise it wou'd have been impossible for me to have kept twelve or fifteen hundred young, impetuous *Abaquis*, in the plantations; or have prepar'd them to submit to the constraint, which is inseparable from military exercises.

THEY nevertheless agreed to my proposal with great chearfulness. I thereupon divided them into several bands, in imitation of our companies and regiments. I appointed superior and subaltern officers, and made *Moon* generalissimo; and this I did in return for the important service he had done me. This savage was brave and resolute, but at the same time hasty and turbulent; and I was very sorry when his ill conduct afterwards oblig'd me to treat him otherwise than I would willingly have done.

I UNDOUBTEDLY should never have been able to instruct the *Abaquis* in the art of war, had I not before made it my study. But besides, that there is no science, the elements whereof a man of good sense may not find by reflection; I knew that Mr. *Youngster* might be very useful to me, as he had serv'd in the troops in *England*; for which reason I intended to leave this province entirely to him. He indeed exerted himself in it to admiration,

and succeeded far beyond my expectations. He had a pleasing air, but at the same time, was of a severe disposition; so that in a few months he establish'd a most excellent discipline among the young *Abaquis*. There was only one circumstance I dislik'd in his method, which was, his punishing with too great severity, such as neglected their duty. This I reproach'd him with, and at last made him confess; that officers were highly in the wrong, to treat their soldiers with pride and cruelty, since these cou'd not fail to stifle their courage and resolution. They, says I, must be taught obedience, but not us'd as slaves. But to proceed. *Youngster* had taught the savages all kinds of military exercises; and had even invented several instruments of war, which did much greater execution than their arrows and clubs. As we had no iron, he had caus'd them to make sabres of a heavy wood, hardened in the fire, and had wrought them to so thin an edge, by the help of certain sharp stones, that they cut very deep; and did as much service as steel sabres cou'd have done, since the savages always went naked. He had invented pikes for them, at the ends of which sharp bones were set; ponyards which they hung

hung by their quivers, and other murdering instruments, which perhaps were so many fatal presents he made the savages; however, as the *Rouintons* their enemies, were so cruel and bloody a people, these might with great justice be employ'd against them. Besides this, a guard was set near my hut, and in several other parts of the plantation; and Mr. *Youngster* visited the posts every night, in order to accustom his pupils to vigilance. He did not suffer, as was before observ'd, the least fault to go unpunish'd; so that we were not only secure against the attacks of our enemies, but even in a condition to brave them, had I not thought it but just not to molest them, so long as they themselves would continue in peace.

UPWARDS of two months were now past since the departure of my envoys, so that I did not know what to think of their long stay; and our fears for his lordship increas'd to such a degree, that they did not suffer us to enjoy a moment's ease. One day as we were discoursing on some melancholly subject, old *Iglou* came and told me with a transport of joy, that the six *Abaquis* were that instant arriv'd in the plantation, accompanied by a foreigner, cloath'd from head to foot.



My impatience was so great upon hearing this piece of news, that I wou'd not wait for their coming, and thereupon I ran out to meet them. They indeed had brought an *Englishman* along with them; but as his face was unknown to me, I was afraid I had flatter'd myself too much, in promising I should hear good news. I was first oblig'd to hear what the *Abaquis* had to say, who told me in a tumultuous manner, the troubles and fatigues they had met with in the journey; and how difficult it was for them to reach *Virginia*. They had wander'd along time without, scarcely knowing whither they were going; and having advanc'd towards the left, instead of travelling strait on to *Carolina*, they had gone round the foot of the *Apalatian* mountains, only 'because the way was better; so that by meeting some savages, they, by little and little, found out the right course; and at last arriv'd happily in the neighbourhood of *Pawhatan*, which is very well cultivated, whence they soon reach'd the town. These were the most considerable particulars they had to tell me, as they did not understand the language which was spoke there; but added, that the foreigner they brought along with them would acquaint me farther.

THIS

THIS *Englishman* indeed hinted to me, that he had matters of great importance to communicate ; and that he was come from *Pawhatan* for that purpose. I thereupon brought him immediately to my house ; where, in presence of my wife and Mrs. *Riding*, who was as impatient to hear what he had to say as myself ; he drew a letter out of his pocket, and desir'd me to read it, before he explain'd himself farther. I immediately saw it was Mrs. *Lallin's* hand, which brought all the blood into my face. I wanted to conceal this letter from my wife, so that I was in doubt, for a moment or two, whether I shou'd open it before her.

IN order to unfold this mystery, I am to observe, that I had hitherto been silent with regard to Mrs. *Lallin* and the unhappy voyage she had undertaken. Notwithstanding the commerce I had carried on with her, was of a most innocent nature ; I was of opinion, that since fate had separated us, and that there was little probability of our ever meeting more ; I therefore had no occasion to mention to the viscount and my wife, the resolution Mrs. *Lallin* had taken of accompanying me. The reader may recollect, that a little before we left *Roan*, I was very uneasy

easy when I consider'd the ill effects, which her presence might cause in the mind of my *Fanny*. However, gratitude and pity had made me overlook this consideration; but as things had chang'd so unhappily for Mrs. *Lallin*, I did not think myself oblig'd to relate a story to my wife, which was not in any manner favourable to me; tho' I was perswaded the latter lov'd me so dearly, that her imagination would not form any chimeras to my prejudice. Nevertheless I consider'd, that as she would not only discover indirectly, and in some measure, against my will, that lady's voyage; the motives of it, and the correspondence which had been carried on between us; but likewise might perhaps find some tender expressions in the letter, by which Mrs. *Lallin* might discover, her great uneasiness at our separation: These things consider'd, I say; my wife would have just reason, if not to suspect me of infidelity; at least to be surpriz'd that I had so carefully conceal'd from her an incident of so extraordinary a nature. This reflection, which presented itself to my imagination in its utmost strength, fill'd me with the highest confusion. However, I found it absolutely necessary for me to open the letter,

ter; and the only assistance which a moment's reflection could give me, was to summon up all my resolution, in order to put as unconcern'd a face upon the matter as possible. However, all my endeavours were in vain, and I was doom'd to be undone. But wherefore should I keep the reader any longer in suspense? my unhappy wife had before receiv'd notice of Mrs. *Lallin's* arrival in the *West-Indies*; and her deep melancholly, the cause of which she so industriously conceal'd from me, arose wholly from the jealousy she entertain'd. Most fatal passion! This, young *Iglou* had given birth to, by his rash and inconsiderate zeal in relating whatever he had heard of my adventures, either from myself, who had sometimes unbosom'd myself to him with too little caution; or by some other means, which I cou'd never find out. Curiosity had prompted my wife to ask him several questions; but the more ambiguity and confusion she found in his answers, the greater was her perplexity and anguish; but my never once mentioning Mrs. *Lallin's* name or any thing that concern'd her, confirm'd the suspicions she had harbour'd, and pierc'd her heart. She fancied herself betray'd; or at least,

in

in case she could be persuaded, that the testimonies I then gave her of my love were sincere and genuine, she yet consider'd them merely as coming from a man who was return'd, after having abandon'd her for some time ; and who, had he not been dismiss'd by her rival, would never have endeavour'd to reingratiate himself into her affection. Nevertheless, her mildness, her submission to the viscount's will, and even her inclination, stronger than her resentment, had made her yield to take me for her husband ; but then, an arrow was fixt deep in her heart, which all my fond caresses cou'd not remove. Mrs. *Riding*, whom she had made the confident of her sorrows, strove, but in vain, to sooth 'em by the consolation she administred. 'Twas she advis'd my wife to conceal the cause of her woe ; for *Fanny* herself was not capable of dissembling so long ; and her heart was unsusceptible of any sensations, but those of the strictest rectitude and integrity. However, Mrs. *Riding* was not to be condemn'd for the advice she gave ; for she was afraid, if we should come to explications of this nature, it would be follow'd by a mutual indifference ; and consequently that the remedy would be much more dangerous



dangerous than the disease. Such was the fatal foundation of my wife's fortunes and mine. We shall see her, observing an obstinate silence for a long course of years, love me with an unlimited passion, and perpetually feed upon the most rack-ing pains; and I, on the other side, ever conscious of my own innocence and fidelity, act inconsiderately in this supposition; and make me guilty, not only of my own calamities, but the crimes of other people; by involuntary occasioning the most tragical and bloody catastrophes. Thou eternal source of justice! who shalt undertake to unravel thy designs! Thou hast accustom'd me to feel the most terrible effects of them, without my once daring to search out, or murmur at them.

I HAVE, perhaps, gratified the reader's curiosity too soon; for in order to have made my story more affecting, and give it all the graces of a romance, I shou'd have conceal'd this incident, till I was come to the conclusion of my work. But have I studied only to please; and did I promise to present my readers with any thing, but a faithful picture of my own sufferings? 'Twou'd have been too great a pain to me, had I suffer'd my dear wife's innocence, and my own constancy, to  
have

have been suspected a moment. It shou'd only be remembred, that in the incidents I shall relate hereafter, I was wholly in the dark with regard to the calamitous circumstance above related; for had I been acquainted with it, I shou'd not in all probability have been so wretched.

I THEREFORE affected to appear as easy as I possibly cou'd, upon my opening Mrs. *Lallin's* letter; and the better to prevent my wife's suspicions, I told her before I began to read it, that I knew the hand; and that in order to make her more capable of understanding the contents; she was to know that the lady who had sent it, went on board the same ship with me at *Roan*, with the design of going for the *West-Indies*. We have, says I, been so much taken up with relating our own woes; that I had no opportunity to acquaint you with those of others. However, you shall hear that lady's story whenever you will. I then read Mrs. *Lallin's* letter without any apparent surprize.

THE purport was, that she was overjoy'd to hear I was arriv'd safe in the *West-Indies*, and had escap'd that bloody wretch *Wills*; that she her self was got out of his hands by a stratagem; and that the hopes of finding my lord in *Pawbatan*,

or

of some other part of *Virginia*, had prompted her to leave *Jamaica*, where she fled from her ravisher; and to retire in the country above-mention'd. That chance having brought my six savages to *Pawhatan*, they had presented my letter to the first *Englishman* they met with in that town. The viscount's name had excited the curiosity of the inhabitants, so that the letter having been given from one to the other, had at last fallen into her hands. That she had given an *Englishman* a very handsome gratuity, to go along with my savages in their return. She assur'd me, that she wou'd with infinite pleasure have accompanied them; but as this was an impossible thing, she conjur'd me to write to her as soon as possible, and inform her how we might meet. With regard to the viscount, she seem'd to be deeply afflicted, that there was no news of him, no one having heard of him since his leaving *Pawhatan*. However, she said, I might almost depend, that there was no farther danger to be apprehended from captain *Wills*; who, after searching about to no purpose, was going to sail for *Europe*. She concluded with enquiring after my wife and Mrs. *Riding*, and express'd the sincerest wishes for their prosperity.

SUCH

SUCH were the contents of this letter, the sight of which had put me to so much pain. As it was express'd in the most prudent terms, I was more easy than ever; and therefore did not scruple to relate in few words to my wife and Mrs. *Riding*, the motives and principal circumstances of Mrs. *Lallin's* voyage. They listen'd to me with the utmost composure, when Mrs. *Riding* wav'd the project, and began to talk about the viscount. This made me silent with regard to the letter; and as I did not perceive the least emotion in my wife's eyes or countenance, my mind was at rest. I was highly pleas'd that Mrs. *Lallin* had express'd so much esteem for the viscount, and the news of *Wills's* departure very much lessen'd the fear I was under upon his lordship's account. I imagin'd I might justly flatter my self, that he had reach'd *Carolina*; that he had been receiv'd there without any opposition; and that he wou'd not let us hear from him, 'till he had happily settled all matters in that province. 'Twas true indeed, that he had been absent a long time; but how ingenious soever tenderness may be in tormenting itself, I cou'd not perceive any real grounds to alarm me. His lordship was attended by so strong a guard,

guard, as secur'd him from the attacks of any savage nations he might meet with in his way; and though I were to suppose that a body of these had fallen upon him, I yet believ'd that he might have come off victorious; because I cou'd not imagine, that his whole guard had been cut to pieces, and not one of 'em escap'd to acquaint us with the news. These false arguments contributed to sooth the anxiety I felt for his lordship's absence: and thus I form'd to my self a cruel illusion, with regard to two of the most fatal accidents that ever happen'd to me, — I was oblig'd to answer Mrs. *Lallin's* letter; this I did without the least mystery or affectation, and writ it in my wife's presence. All I writ to Mrs. *Lallin*, was, that I was vastly glad that she had escap'd out of the hands of her persecutor. I advis'd her to continue in *Pawhatan*, till such time as we might have an opportunity of meeting together again. I inform'd her of our marriage; and desir'd that she would, for all our interests, make all the enquiry imaginable after the viscount. The six savages having consented to return to *Virginia*, with the *Englishman* who had accompanied them; I made 'em promise to return by *Carolina*, and also beg-



ged of Mrs. *Lallin* to procure 'em guides, and whatever else might be necessary for the journey.

I WAS much easier in my mind after their setting out than I had been for a long time. It was now highly probable that I should soon certainly know where his lordship was; and my wife, now struggling more than ever with her self, completely conceal'd from me the perpetual uneasiness which her jealousy occasioned. Mrs. *Riding* very probably advis'd her to this. 'Twas now some time since she was known to be with child, which was highly pleasing to the *Abaquis*; who having certain superstitious ceremonies relating to the women, which they practis'd on these occasions, they desir'd it might be observ'd with regard to my wife. However, I rejected their offers, and made this a handle, as I had before done several others, to eradicate their simple errors by insensible degrees. They listen'd to me with an air of the highest admiration, when I told them of a deity, who was much more ancient and more powerful than the sun; which even was created by that power, and perpetually receiv'd its light and heat from him. But as their minds were incapable of being  
convinc'd

convinc'd by force of argument, I never perceiv'd that my discourse made so great an impression on them as I desir'd; and I waited, before I thought proper to attempt any innovation in their religion, in expectation of some extraordinary event, which might be made subservient to the design abovemention'd. At last a thing happen'd, which gave me all imaginable success in that affair. Possibly the reader may find something irregular, or at least too human, in the methods I employ'd; especially with regard to an ignorant people, whose minds cou'd not be wrought upon by any other methods.

*Moou*, as I before observ'd, was endow'd with excellent qualities. He was well shap'd, and of a robust constitution; was sober, artful, daring, generous; and so intrepid, that he was justly look'd upon as the bravest man among the *Abaquis*. But then his rough and hasty temper, was not easy to be wrought upon; so that I often wonder'd, as *Mr. Youngster* was of a very imperious and severe turn of mind, how it was possible for them to be such good friends. At last they happen'd to have a very warm dispute on some point of military discipline; and being both of too high a spirit to keep within due bounds, they

they carried their animosity to that height, that they at last became irreconcilable enemies. I was immediately told of their quarrel, the cause of which *Youngster* gave me a fair and complete account; and though he had perhaps acted a little imprudently in this affair, 'twas plain, as he told his story, that *Moon* was wholly in the wrong. This he undoubtedly was sensible of; for I having sent for him to come to my hut, in order to give an account of his conduct, he refus'd to come; and shut himself up for some days in his hut, and would not be seen by his most intimate friends. His obstinacy made me very uneasy; for I could not wink at his disobedience, since it struck so much at my authority; and on the other side, I was afraid of using too much severity on this occasion, as this would exasperate the greatest part of the young savages, who were very fond of him. I therefore first employ'd old *Iglou* and some other *Abaquis* of the greatest temper, to make him sensible, in a calm way, of his error. However, they strove to no purpose; for *Moon* being of a revengeful cast of mind, cou'd not put up the affront which *Youngster* had put upon him, he having struck him several times. *Moon* threaten'd him publickly, and swore he'd

he'd be reveng'd; not only against him, but my self and my whole family. But now I began to look upon this as so serious an affair, that I thought it would be proper for me to apply a speedy remedy. This I was more prompted to, when I heard that a great number of savages who were in *Moou's* interest, visited him every night; and that these would, in all probability, concert upon measures to satisfy their resentments. The very same night that this was told me, a young *Abaquis* came privately to me in the dark, and taking me aside, told me a piece of news which startled me prodigiously. He had been secretly inform'd of *Moou's* design, which was, to assemble with several he had engag'd in his conspiracy, in the dead of night; after which they should rush into my house, and murder every one in it but my wife, whom he intended to take to himself; and this being done, to assume the same authority over the people as I enjoy'd; an authority which, he said, I ow'd entirely to him.

I THANK'D the young savage in the kindest manner; and as so imminent a danger requir'd to be guarded against; I acquainted, in the most secret manner, all such of the *Abaquis* as I could trust,

of the conspiracy that was carrying on against me; I desir'd them to watch all night round my hut, and not to suffer a soul to come near it, without my orders. After this, revolving how I might counterplot *Moon*; and not thinking it safe to arrest him in his hut, I resolv'd to get rid of him the safest way, that is, to get him kill'd privately. The character I was invested with, empower'd me to do this justly, as *Moon* had rebell'd against me, and broke his oath of allegiance. This last reflection suggested another of a more extensive nature; which was perfectly well adapted to the design I had of bringing the *Abaquis* to the knowledge of the true God. This thought gave me the highest pleasure; and I immediately took such measures to execute it, as succeeded to the utmost of my wishes.

I ASSEMBLED all the savages that were about my hut; and being desirous of having the greatest number of witnesses I possibly cou'd; I therefore sent for all those who inhabited the neighbouring huts. Finding they were dispos'd to hearken to me, I made them call to mind the oath they had taken to obey me; and the punishment which those were to expect, as  
should



should presume to violate it. *Moou*, says I, is guilty of the highest perjury: were the sun whom you worship, as powerful a God as you represent him to be, he would have made him feel the dreadful effects of his vengeance 'ere this. I let some days pass away, purposely to prove, that you are wretchedly mistaken in the object of your worship; and that the God whom I adore, is alone able of revenging and inflicting punishment. I therefore declare to you in his name; that all such among you as shall fail in your obedience, shall be chastiz'd by him in a most terrible manner; and that *Moou* shall be made the first example of it. Go, says I, turning myself to old *Iglou*, go and acquaint him with this; and advise him to repent of his abominable design, otherwise that he will certainly be punished with death.

I DID not dismiss my savages, till after I had besought them, for their own sakes, to take warning by *Moou*'s unhappy fate, and to reflect deeply on what wou'd soon happen. Afterwards going into my hut with Mr. *Youngster*, I communicated my design to, and order'd him, to put it in execution. But as I was desirous of accompanying *Moou*'s execution,

with something of an extraordinary nature, which might strike horror into the minds of the *Abaquis*; we consider'd what stratagem cou'd be invented, in order to impose upon those credulous and ignorant people. Had I had but a good quantity of gunpowder by me, a thousand methods might have been found out, to scare 'em, either by the report, or by other effects which were unknown to them; but then I had brought so little with me from *Paw-batan*, that having given the viscount part of it, and the pair of pistols which belong'd to my slave *Iglou*, I by that means had not above half a pound left. However, Mr. *Youngster* was of opinion this quantity was sufficient for the project which came into his head; and tho' it were a very childish one, it yet had a wish'd for success. He took my box of powder, which was made of thick horn, and surrounded with three or four brass plates. This he shut very close, pressing down the powder in order that it might make the greater explosion; boring only a small hole in it, in which he put a fusee. He afterwards ty'd a piece of twine to the box, at which it was, to hang. Having after this taken my pair of pistols, which he charg'd, he went out, attended only by

by our two *Englishmen* whose assistance he wanted. His intention was to get upon their shoulders, and to climb to the top of *Moou's* hut ; and as it was excessive dark, there was no fear of his being seen. He then design'd to creep to the chimney, which was only a large hole made in the roof, as is the custom of most *American* nations ; set fire to the fusee ; and then let down the box into the hut ; and being persuaded that the surprize at seeing the sparks of the fusee, would immediately draw *Moou* and his companions, under the hole which serv'd 'em as a chimney ; he then hop'd he should have a good opportunity of shooting him. The report of the pistol, the death of the rebel, the noise of the box which would break into a thousand pieces, were all circumstances which could not fail of frightening the savages ; but then I was apprehensive that some of them would take it into their heads to look presently on the outside of the hut ; and thereby perceive Mr. *Youngster* on the top of it, as it was not very high. However, he was absolutely resolv'd to run the hazard of this. His two companions were to make off, as soon as they had lifted him upon it ; and he was of opinion, that it would

be a very easy matter for him to slip away in the dark. He desir'd I wou'd give him leave to set fire to the hut, as he went off, in order to make the whole a dreadful scene; but this I never wou'd consent to, for fear of burning down the whole plantation.

JUST as he was going away, old *Iglou* came to acquaint me with what he had done. His coming suggested a new hint, which was of advantageous success to what I had in view. After he had told me that *Moou* laugh'd at my threats, and seem'd to value the punishments which heaven might inflict, as little as those I threatned him with; I commanded him to return instantly, and renew his exhortations to the rebels; and order'd him to take several of the oldest and most respected members of the council, along with him. My view in this, was, purely that they might be spectator's of *Moou's* death, which would thereby be a lesson to them. I thereupon sent 'em away immediately; and Mr. *Youngster* hastened to the same place another way. My curiosity to know how this would end was so great, that I could not forbear following them at some distance; and it being very dark, I stood about fifty paces from *Moou's* hut. I had  
not

not been long there, before I perceiv'd several sparks of the fusee, which came out thro' the hole in the roof; when immediately the box burst, and made a much greater explosion than I expected. *Youngster* did not expect this; for he hop'd to have kill'd *Moou* first; and I was afraid for some moments, that it would be impossible for him to fire his pistol as he intended; a circumstance which wou'd have entirely disconcerted all our measures. However, hearing the pistol go off a moment after, I believ'd that it had done execution. The two *Englishmen* ran just by me, but did not discover me in the least; and *Youngster* coming up a little after, I spoke; when he told me that he had been so successful, that one wou'd imagine providence had guided his hand. Scarce had he let down the box, but the savages, amaz'd to see the sparks, had ran to it in the utmost astonishment, and were about five and twenty or thirty. As the fusee burnt a little too fast, he could not distinguish *Moou* soon enough to fire at him immediately. The box had burst with great impetuosity; however, this disappointment prov'd of advantage, by striking terror into all who were present. Some were dangerously wounded by the



shivers of the box, and all had flung themselves on the ground, roaring out at the same time in a most dreadful manner, *Moon* only excepted, who was not to be daunted: For this bold savage had run up just under the hole, in order, if possible, to see what it was that occasion'd so extraordinary an accident, by which means it was a very easy matter for *Youngster* to shoot him dead.

WE immediately retir'd to my hut, in order to wait for the effects of this scene. We had not been in it a moment, before we heard a dreadful cry, which seem'd to come from all parts of the plantation. Such of *Moon's* partizans as cou'd fly, were got to their respective huts, where their terror and consternation, discover'd as plainly as their words, the prodigy that had happen'd. The whole plantation ran towards the place where *Moon's* body lay, in order to get a sight of it, and of five or six young *Abaquis* that still lay prostrate by him, who were as much kept down by the fright, as by their wounds. Immediately it was universally known, that I had sent and desir'd the conspirators to be quiet, not above an hour before; a circumstance which perswaded them, that  
their

their punishment cou'd be nothing but the effect of my menaces. This soon becoming the general opinion, and being confirm'd by those who had heard my speech, and what I had foretold; they began to be afraid, that the God whose anger I had foretold, would continue his vengeance upon them; and so surprizing was the effect of this fear, that all the *Abaquis* in the plantation assembled in an instant round my hut, howling in a most mournful manner, and beseeching me to appear immediately and assist them.

UPON this I came out, in order to comfort them by my presence. Tho' 'twas not very late in the night, I found it as light as day. The savages had lighted a numberless multitude of such torches as they use; these are long poles made of dry wood, cover'd over with a kind of pitch. They ceas'd to howl when I appear'd; when finding them dispos'd to hearken to me, I caus'd a form to be brought out, and got upon it, in order to be the better heard by the multitude. I expatiated on *Moou's* crime in the strongest terms, and on the justice of his punishment. I observ'd, that tho' it had been a very severe one, I yet assur'd them, that the God I serv'd was a kind master, who

never exercis'd his vengeance but with reluctance; and wou'd even have pardon'd *Moou*, had he not persisted obstinately in his guilt, and thereby justly merited the fate he had met with; but that seeing him hardned in his rebellion; and the sun, whom they had hitherto suppos'd to be so formidable, not being able to reform him; I myself had therefore, by my prayers, brought down that dreadful vengeance upon him; that all those who should follow *Moou*'s example, must expect the same sad catastrophe. I added, that the same God who was able to punish in so terrible a manner, bid me offer them blessings, provided they would adore him; that they were now sensible of his power, which should be employ'd to make them happy, and extirpate the *Rouintons* their enemies; that having a sincere affection for the *Abaquis* in general, as they might easily judge by the zeal and concern I show'd in every thing that related to their welfare; I consequently wou'd not propose any thing but what should redound to their advantage; however, that I was oblig'd to give 'em notice, that after the offer I had made 'em, of being indulg'd the protection and friendship of that great God; they

they must expect nothing but hatred, in case they did not receive it with thanks; and likewise that if they refus'd to prefer it to the sun, they would inevitably meet with the same sad fate as *Moou*.

I HAD spoke so loud and so distinctly, that the whole assembly heard every thing I said; when they discover'd by their shouts, and their applauses, that they were ready to obey all my commands. Upon this, I appointed them to meet me in the afternoon in the field where the assemblies were kept, and told 'em, that I would then explain myself farther.

THEY all seem'd highly pleas'd when they went away. I also was overjoy'd to find myself so happily rid of all my fears, and upon the point of succeeding in a project which I had always very much at heart; I now began to meditate on the scheme of religion which it wou'd be proper for me to draw up for them, and was not long before I pitch'd on one. They were inform'd with no other light than that of nature, and I did not think it was possible to make them imbibe those of education. Upon this supposition, I enquir'd, in myself, what an infinitely just Being might require at their hands; and methought, that the most essential

point of their obligations, was, to acknowledge a God eternal and omnipotent, creator and ruler of all things; to worship him only, and hope to be rewarded by him. Such were the bounds I thought proper to prescribe to their faith. With regard to worship, I resolv'd to banish all ceremonies of a mysterious nature, because they are always sure to degenerate to superstition; and that I did not intend to live always among them, I was willing to do whatever lay in my power, to prevent their returning to idolatry. I did not even think fit to appoint any churches or temples; for what use wou'd they have apply'd 'em to? These they only would have embellish'd and adorn'd. Their ideas wou'd soon have been confin'd within the limits of the walls of them, and would not ascend higher than the roofs. Then they would insensibly have introduc'd idols therein, a circumstance which wou'd have plung'd them into greater darkness and ignorance. Whereas in considering the whole universe as a magnificent temple, rais'd by the almighty architect; and God himself seated on the clouds as his throne, whence he is incessantly prepar'd to hear our supplications, and receive our adorations; I was of opinion



nion that so noble, so august an idea would engage their whole attention; and imprint itself so strongly on their imaginations, that it wou'd be impossible for it ever to be effac'd. I was absolutely fix'd upon the latter article, and only added two things to it, which I thought well adapted to the weakness of this people's minds; the first was, to enact that twice every week, or every third day, all the *Abaquis* should assemble in a religious way; the second, was, to compose a short, but clear and expressive prayer, which every *Abaquis* should get by heart. And lest any one should forget, or omit repeating it, my design was, that every master of a family should pronounce it in his turn with a loud voice, in the general assemblies abovemention'd; and that each of those chiefs shou'd cause it to be repeated every day in his family, to all persons of both sexes, whom I subjected to their authority. How simple and uncompounded soever this scheme of religion may appear to the reader; I yet was so well acquainted with the genius and character of the *Abaquis*, that I was almost sure it was the only one that cou'd subsist for a long time; particularly after I had resolv'd to engage the members of  
the

the council by a solemn oath, which they should be oblig'd to take at their admission, to see this observ'd in their respective districts; and not to suffer the custom of praying to be ever disus'd.

THE morning of the day on which this happy change was to be made, I heard that a great number of the principal *Abaquis*, were assembled in a private hut; and were conferring on something, which had all the air of a secret. This gave me some alarm, imagining it to be some dregs of *Moou's* conspiracy. I was going to hasten to the place where they were, when word was brought me that they were separated, and that some of them were coming directly towards my hut. Upon this I was resolv'd to be upon my guard. I found that three of the senior members of the council, had been deputed to me from the rest. Being come in, one of 'em told me the occasion of his visit in a most respectful manner. All our countrey-men, says he, were very sensible that the God you wou'd have 'em adore is more powerful than the sun; but then they desire to know where this God was, who had never exhibited himself to them as the sun does; and in what part of the universe he inhabits. This, says

says he, I entreat you to instruct them in, before you oblige us to leave our antient worship. I look'd upon this question, and the reflexions which must naturally have resulted from it, to be very profound, for persons of so little genius as the *Abaquis*. I answer'd in the mildest manner, that I was overjoy'd to find them so wise; and therefore wou'd satisfy all their difficulties in such a manner, that they should not have one doubt left. And knowing them to be the persons of the best sense in the whole nation, I explain'd to them the scheme of religion which I intended they should embrace. They all approv'd of what I told them, but I was surpriz'd to hear them repeat the objection they had before started. What then, says they, does this God never reveal himself? I confess that this question puzzled me; not from the difficulty of answering it, but for fear lest I should not be able to persuade them that this Being existed, tho' they cou'dn't see him. Nevertheless, heaven inspir'd me with a thought which made the strongest impression on their minds. No, says I, he does not reveal himself, but then he discovers himself by other marks. Don't you often hear it thunder?

They

They answer'd yes; and that they were terribly afraid of it. Well, says I, 'tis the great God who thus moves the heavens, and makes the earth tremble. You have seen rain, hail, snow; you have felt the heat of fire and the severity of cold; you see that your trees, your fruits and every thing you feed upon grow; 'tis he who thus produces every thing which is every instant before your eyes: and yet, mistaken *Abaquis*! you are so ungrateful as to say, that he never reveals himself to you. The truth in my answer; the tone of voice, perhaps, in which I utter'd it; or rather the infinite goodness of God, who was willing to remove the clouds which hung over the minds of these poor savages, open'd their eyes to such a degree; that they seem'd transported with joy, to find a flood of light, breaking in thus suddenly upon them. They then protested, that they'd henceforward never worship any other God but mine; and having left me, they spread the words I had told 'em throughout the whole habitation; by assuring all whom they met with, that nothing was so great as the God I had pointed out to 'em, since 'twas he only who gave birth to trees, fruits, fire, thunder, and the most wonderful things in nature. THEY

THEY were all in this religious disposition, when they assembled that afternoon in the meadow; and their zeal fill'd me with so much joy, that I cou'd not forbear shedding tears. My wife and Mrs. *Riding*, who were both desirous of being present at this pious spectacle, were likewise prodigiously affected. I then propos'd my scheme to them; appointed the times and order of the assembly; I display'd to them, by the strongest expressions, and under the most lively images, the greatness of the Being whom they were going to serve; what they were to expect from this goodness in case they serv'd him faithfully, and from his anger, if ever they broke the engagements by which they were going to bind themselves. Notwithstanding their ignorance, I yet made 'em comprehend, that abstracted from the pleasures and rewards which I assur'd them they would enjoy after death, in case they led good lives; the religion they were going to embrace, would be of the greatest advantage to the whole nation, and to the support of the laws which I had establish'd among them; that after obliging them to honour almighty God, it did not prescribe any more than those I had laid down; that is,

to



to love one another, and to do their utmost, to heighten the publick, as well as private, happiness. I exhorted them especially to acknowledge the blessings they receiv'd perpetually, from the supreme Being. 'Tis he, says I, who gave you birth; who preserves you, and furnishes you with every thing, both for pleasure and use. Is it not therefore absolutely requisite, that you should love him, who thus showers down his blessings on you? Ye *Abaquis*! nature has given you a heart; learn to make a proper use of it; and in case you are sensible to any thing, let it be to the blessings which are continually indulg'd you.

THE multitude observ'd such a silence, as shew'd their great content and admiration. I observ'd, that most of 'em turn'd their eyes towards heaven, whenever they heard me pronounce the name of God; as tho' they endeavour'd to see him in the place, where I told 'em he resided; and that he was observing, from his throne, the sincerity of their hearts on that occasion. At last, I heightned their attention, by mentioning the prayer I had compos'd for their use; and having exhorted them to follow me with their whole souls, I pronounc'd it aloud, my eyes and  
arms

arms turn'd upwards. They all imitated the posture I was in ; and I must confess, that a delicious sensation of joy diffus'd itself over my whole soul, when I concluded this august ceremony. Perhaps heaven never receiv'd more sincere, more disinterested homage, than that which was then paid by these innocent and upright people ; and I have ever look'd upon the share I had in this great change, as one of the most glorious and most fortunate circumstances of my life.

I EMPLOY'D myself for some days, in teaching, or causing to be taught, my prayer to all the masters of families, in order that they might be able to teach it their children. My wife and Mrs. *Riding* instructed the women in the same manner. They had already employ'd themselves to very good purpose, in inspiring them with the most perfect ideas of virtue and modesty ; of love and fidelity for their husbands ; tenderness for their children ; and to extinguish in them their strange rusticity ; but observing at the same time, not to substitute any thing in their place, which might one day deprave their minds, or promote effeminacy. We acted every thing in concert ; and the aim and design of all the care we took,

was,

was, to deliver the *Abaquis* from every thing, which, till then, had sunk 'em below the dignity of human nature. This was my wife's reflection. In reality, says she, humanity has nothing to do with whatever clashes with reason, or goes beyond it; and in this sense, we should, perhaps, find as many savages and barbarians in *Europe*, as in *America*. Most of the *European* nations, deviate from reason by their excess of effeminacy, luxury, ambition, and avarice; and those of *America*, by their rusticity and brutishness; but I don't find either of these, to be properly what may be call'd man. The former soar, as it were, above their natural condition, and the latter sink beneath it; and thus the *Europeans* and *Americans* are real barbarians, with respect to the true point in which they ought to resemble one another, in order to be then properly so call'd. We must, says she, if possible, raise the minds of the *Abaquis* to this point, and endeavour to find out such methods, as may be most capable of fixing them in it.

WHILST we were doing the poor savages this signal piece of service, which the employment I had accepted of, made me consider as a duty; we at the same time

time did not forget what more immediately concern'd us. We continued to beg of heaven, to preserve the viscount; to give success to all his designs, and wish'd earnestly to see him; and all our discourses concluded, with asking one another very anxiously, what could be become of him. My wife was now so far gone with child, that whatever might happen, I cou'd not think of leaving the *Abaquis* till after her delivery. Some weeks more past over our heads, when at last the pains of childbirth came upon her. She a little after was deliver'd of a daughter, who, they told me, was like her unhappy father. Sad object of the most cruel sentence of fate! Alas! under what baleful auspices wert thou born! I took her in my arms, and with a heart overflowing with paternal fondness; the first wish I form'd for her, was, that she might be happier than her father and mother. Alas! my wishes were not heard.

My wife soon grew pretty well, when she turn'd her whole care to our daughter. 'Tis well known that mothers love with an excess of fondness, and I observ'd that this had an effect on my wife's temper. She now was not so melancholly; her eyes seem'd to sparkle brighter; and  
whether

whether it were that this dear pledge of our love, had increas'd her affection for me, and remov'd her suspicions; or that the bare joy of having a daughter, wrought this change; I found her much more endearing than she had ever been. It was impossible but I must grow fonder, so dear she was to me: The ease of mind she discover'd, awak'd something in my heart which I had not felt before. This I acquainted Mrs. *Riding* with privately, who seem'd overjoy'd, but did not explain herself any farther.

I CONTINUED for some time to govern the *Abaquis* in a very peaceable manner, when some of these as they were hunting, happening to meet with a body of *Rouintons* in the midst of a forest; the antipathy between the two nations was so great, that there was no possibility for them to separate, without fighting. The *Abaquis* were worsted. Several of them lost their lives, and most of those who escap'd were wounded. This unhappy accident, reviv'd the hatred which the *Abaquis* bore to their cruel neighbours. The young people especially, whose military exercises turn'd their minds much more to war; being spurr'd on by Mr. *Youngster*, who had a passionate desire to try their courage; were



were very urgent with me, to permit 'em to revenge the insult which had been put upon the *Abaquis*. I was in doubt whether I should agree to the motion, for I had always an aversion to war. 'Tis a scandal to reason and mankind. If we except the case of a just defence, which even ought to inspire horror after a victory is obtain'd; a battle is the vilest attempt of fury and extravagance; and according to the principles of my moral system, a hero is an infamous monster. As I entertain'd such sentiments as these, 'twas natural for me not to acquiesce easily with the earnest entreaties of the savages. Nevertheless, the same reason which had prompted me to give them a tincture of military discipline, under Mr. *Youngster's* direction; made me consider, that 'twou'd be of the highest advantage to the whole nation, to humble the *Rouintons* before I left the countrey; and to make such a dreadful havock among 'em, that it should not be in their power to annoy them more. I likewise flatter'd myself, that in case the *Rouintons* were not absolutely untractable, it would not be impossible to win them over by degrees; and to engage them, if possible, to be so well reconcil'd to the *Abaquis*, that each side might

might lay aside all their hatred ; and after this unite together, and form but one nation.

HAVING therefore discours'd with Mr. *Youngster*, on such measures as might be proper for the design, I declar'd publicly, that I thought it was necessary and just, to denounce war against the *Rouintons* ; and in order to give the *Abaquis* a fresh testimony of my affection, I promis'd to march at their head. Hearing this, they all discover'd the satisfaction this gave them, by extraordinary shouts ; and immediately, nothing was thought of but our military preparations. I left this to Mr. *Youngster's* care ; and endeavour'd for some days to comfort my wife and Mrs. *Riding*, who were terribly alarm'd at this resolution. Their fears, intleed, wou'd have been justly grounded, in case I had run much risk. 'Tis certain that I could not, without being guilty of the highest folly, have expos'd them to the dreadful circumstances they dreaded, in case death, or some other accident, had depriv'd them, of my assistance ; but I was sure the *Rouintons* wou'd not stand their ground when I appear'd. The smallness of their number, which could not possibly have been  
increas'd,

increas'd, since the late losses they had sustain'd; and the extraordinary idea they entertain'd of me from common fame, which cou'd not but have reach'd them; these particulars, made me, I say, to consider this expedition no otherwise than as a party of hunting, that was to last three or four days. Besides, I propos'd to reduce them by kindness, and an offer of favours, rather than by force of arms. I therefore made it plainly appear to our two ladies, that they had no occasion to be under any terrors upon my account; and that with regard to themselves, they might depend upon being as secure in the habitation, as in the strongest city of *Europe*.

AND indeed, having march'd two days after at the head of a body of the most vigorous *Abaquis*, I made my way, in less than twelve hours, to the principal plantation of the *Rouintons*. Altho' our enemies expected, that their neighbours would resent the late slaughter; I yet did not find that they stood on their guard, as tho' they had been apprehensive of an attack. But such, as I before observ'd, is the genius and character of most of these unthinking nations. They know not how to defend themselves according

to art, nor are inform'd with the least spark of prudence. They engage, and cut one another to pieces in the most brutish manner, upon the least quarrel; the weakest take to their heels, and the victor draws off, till he has a fresh opportunity of renewing the combat. It had been a very easy matter for me, to have fallen upon the habitation, when I might have cut all the *Rouintons* to pieces. However, I design'd the very contrary. Having given orders for the *Abaquis* to make a halt, I dispatch'd Mr. *Youngster*, who had boldly offer'd to go upon this dangerous message, with three *Abaquis* who were well acquainted with those parts; with orders, to offer peace to our enemies upon three conditions:

1<sup>st</sup>, THAT they should immediately get together all their arms; bring them out of the plantation, and burn them before us.

2<sup>ly</sup>, THAT they should leave the place they inhabited forthwith, and found a new settlement in the valley of the *Abaquis*, in which I promis'd to furnish them with whatever might contribute to make life agreeable.

3<sup>ly</sup>, THAT they should there submit to my authority.

IN case they refus'd to accept of my friendship upon these conditions, I left 'em the choice, either of flying from their plantation, never to return back; or to be all cut to pieces without the least distinction.

I ORDER'D Mr. *Youngster* to assume a severe and haughty air when he made this proposal; but afterwards to discover the utmost mildness and humanity, in order to gain their confidence; and even to exhort some of the chiefs among 'em, to wait upon me unarm'd, in order to receive from me the testimonies of that friendship which I had promis'd to indulge 'em.

THE reader may believe, that I shou'd not have behav'd in this haughty manner, had I not been morally sure of the success of my proceedings. My security was founded on the ignorance of those with whom I treated: I was at the head of fifteen hundred men who were all well arm'd; I heard, by certain information, that the *Rouintons* did not amount to above eight hundred, including women and children; and I knew it was the general custom of the savages to take to their heels, whenever they find themselves overpow-



er'd by numbers. I was afraid but of one circumstance, which was, lest the *Rouintons* should be too much terrified at hearing I was so near 'em; and that, mistrusting the sincerity of my offers, they should immediately fly away, which the savages do very easily, as they go naked. My deputies presented themselves boldly to the entrance of the plantation; and to prevent their being insulted, their first care was to give out, that they were supported by a body of fifteen hundred men. This relation, and the account which they soon gave of the reasons of their arrival, spread instantly among the barbarians, and produc'd part of the effect which I had foreseen; viz. that the greatest part of them being seiz'd with dread, fled away to the neighbouring forest. However, several of those who had crouded about *Youngster*, and to whom he directed his discourse; not seeing any thing which could reasonably fill 'em with dread, listened to him without the least apprehensions. These he soothed by promises; and display'd, as well as he was able, the great advantage they would gain, provided they accepted of my offers. He thought that his speech had made a great impres-

impression on their minds, but as these were but few in number, and that it was very proper to engage all those to return to the plantation who had fled from it; he therefore believ'd that the only method to succeed in this respect, would be to dismiss his auditors, with desiring them to assure the rest, that they need not be under any manner of fear; and that nothing cou'd redound so much to the advantage of their whole nation, as to conclude a lasting peace with the *Abaquis*. He allow'd them the remaining part of that day, and the next night to consult on these matters; and promis'd to return to them the next morning, with the same candid and humane views as he then address'd them with. He endeavour'd to prevail on some of them to come along with him to me, but none of them had the courage to do this.

I WAS overjoy'd to see Mr. *Youngster* return back in so peaceable a manner, and look'd upon it as an omen of the success of his negotiations, when the account he gave me increas'd my hopes. I thereupon applauded his conduct, and resolv'd to stay till the next day. We were but at a little distance from the

plantation, which yet was hid from us, by a little hill. I made choice of this post, purposely that our approach might not terrify the enemy. Mr. *Youngster* establish'd so excellent a discipline in our army, that it wou'd have been impossible for us to be surpriz'd; and as for the *Rouintons*, they lay still all that day.

It being now dark night, word was brought as I was going to take a little rest, that the watch saw great clouds of smoak rise above the hill, and such a blaze as must necessarily proceed from a very great fire. I got up that moment, when looking out, I naturally concluded that the plantation of the *Rouintons* was burning; and did not doubt a moment, but that this cruel people had set fire to it. I thereupon gave strict orders, that no one should stir out of his quarters till break of day; being afraid that the despair of these unhappy wretches, would prompt them to commit some action which might be fatal to us. Day-light appearing, I dispatch'd *Youngster* with a small body of men, to view the motions of the enemy. The account he brought back was very near what I expected.

The

The *Rouintons*, either from a distrust of the sincerity of my promises, or from an effect of inhumanity and barbarity, had chose rather to fly their countrey, than to submit. At their going away, they not only set fire to the great settlement, but likewise to several hamlets that were scatter'd up and down the adjacent parts. Their huts, being built of dry timber, were burnt to ashes; and a circumstance which shew'd the excessive cruelty of their dispositions, they had murther'd all their old men and sick persons. Mr. *Youngster*, saw the bodies of these, who were not yet consum'd in the flames.

THE compassion which was natural to me, fill'd my mind with the deepest anguish, when I reflected on this sad catastrophe. But this instance of their barbarity, being a plain proof, that it wou'd have been impossible for me ever to civilize so brutish a people; I thought the *Abaquis* were vastly happy, in being rid of these dangerous neighbours. Such was the success of this expedition, which could not terrify my wife and Mrs. *Riding* very much, because the savages under me, were not reduc'd to the neces-

sity of shooting a single arrow. I should not have expatiated so much on an event of this nature, had it not been productive, a little after, of the most terrible effects; effects of so dreadful a nature, that my blood curdles in my veins, now I am now going to describe them.



**T.H.E.**





THE  
L I F E  
O F  
Mr. CLEVELAND,  
NATURAL SON  
O F  
*Oliver Cromwell.*

---

BOOK. V.

---



PEACE, tranquillity, and an exact order, being now so happily establish'd among the *Abaquis*, I did not think of multiplying their laws and obligations; but apply'd myself wholly to  
I. 50 make

make them strictly observe those which were already enacted. This was the only method to secure the fruit of my labours, which would have been very uncertain after my departure, had I not taken care to thus bind, as it were, the savages, by the chains of habit. We spent some months in repeating our usual exercises, and in expectation of the return of the savages whom I had sent to *Virginia*, with the person whom Mrs. *Lallin* had sent to me. I postpon'd, till their return, my forming such a resolution, as might bring us to a certainty with regard to the viscount's fate; hoping always that they'd hear where he was, and what had befallen him. I cou'd not judge exactly, of the length of the voyage he had undertaken, or the time he'd be oblig'd to spend in it. This circumstance perplex'd me more than any thing else; I had been frequently determin'd, particularly after my wife's delivery, to set out with my whole family; and endeavour to find out the way to *Carolina*. 'Twas not but I expected that the *Abaquis* would oppose this strongly, as they now lov'd us more than ever: but then I possibly might have deceiv'd them, by assuring them that we would soon return among them. We should  
have

have taken a guard along with us, which would have made 'em conclude, that we did not design to abandon 'em; and these we might have easily got rid of, had heaven been propitious to our design, by directing us to some *English* or *Spanish* colony.

How dangerous soever this resolution might be, yet this was the only one we cou'd think of taking, in case we should have no news of the viscount. At last I yielded to it, but in the same manner as a sick man does to swallow a nauseous potion, which he dreads very near as much as his sickness. I even communicated it to my wife and Mrs. *Riding*, who immediately approv'd it, and were resolv'd to venture, whatever might be the consequences. We were now detain'd by no other motives, than the faint hope we entertain'd, that our savages might happen to arrive when we least expected them. We were not disappointed, for word was brought me one day, that they were come. My surprize was so great, that I cou'd scarce support myself; but it increas'd prodigiously, when I saw my wife seiz'd with fear, and fall into a swoon.

If the reader considers, how uneasy we  
I 6 must

must be, after having liv'd fifteen months among savages; and not heard a single word of the viscount for upwards of a twelve month; that the least glimerings of hope must work after an extraordinary manner upon our minds. But in case it were not joy, 'twas at least our uncertainty with regard to the news we should hear, that occasion'd these unusual tumults. However, we were seen to feel emotions of a less dubious nature; they were those of a deadly fear, and consequently of the deepest grief.

THE savages had first arriv'd in *Paw-batan*. There they had seen Mrs. *Lal-lin*, who had procur'd them a guide to accompany them to *Carolina*. This man being a *Virginian*, and understanding *English*, they had travell'd along the sea-coast; enquiring, as they went, whether any one had seen the viscount, or knew what was become of him. But all this, being to no purpose, and despairing ever to find him, they had return'd towards the valley of the *Abaquis*, in the midst of innumerable dangers, and not knowing in the least whither they were going. At last chance, or rather providence, who wou'd not suffer us to be any longer in the dark with respect to our misfortunes, and prepar'd

par'd us others of a much more grievous nature; brought into their way, as they were crossing a vast desert, one of those brave *Abaquis* who had guarded the viscount. Him they had brought along with 'em; and we heard from his mouth, the sad accident which had happen'd to my lord and his companions.

THAT unhappy nobleman was not advanc'd above four or five days in his journey, before he was attack'd by a company of savages, about the same number with the people he had with him. These he had put to flight with very little loss on his side. However, these wandering barbarians, that inhabited the large desert of *Drexara*, who pass for the most cruel people in all *America*, were not discourag'd at their defeat. Remembring that the viscount was mounted and cloath'd, and also the *Englishmen* who attended upon him, they resolv'd to fall upon them again, in hopes of plunder. They had, however, very much increas'd their numbers, and intercepting the *Abaquis* in their way, at some distance from the place where they had fought; they fell upon them with so much fury, and shot such a shower of arrows, that they kill'd several on the spot. The rest terrified to see themselves  
surrounded



surrounded in a moment with enemies; and finding it impossible for them to fly, had laid down their arms, in hopes of obtaining quarter. These, accordingly, remain'd prisoners, and also the viscount. The victors having divided the spoil, separated, and took different ways. Most of the savages of the desert of *Drexara* are man-eaters; at least they devour their prisoners. These have no fix'd dwelling, but are incessantly hunting after beasts, and after men, whom they look upon as their best game. The only reason why they are call'd savages of *Drexara*, is, because as they ever seek out for mountains and woods, as the places where game most abounds; they therefore are fond of this vast desert, which is full of wild beasts, because 'tis cover'd with forests of a vast extent.

I TREMBLED and was in the utmost consternation, while I listned to this first part of the savage's relation; and did not dare to desire him, to inform me of what I wanted most to know. So dreadful an opening, made me conclude that his lordship had come to some fatal end. My wife, on the other side, was in such distress, that the bare sight of her must have awak'd the most tender sensations of pity.

ty. We continued very attentive to the savage, without daring to speak a single word. Happily, says he; my lord, and twenty of our companions, of whom I was one, fell into the hands of a band of wild people, who are the least cruel, and not so greedy as the rest of human flesh. Not but they devour'd six of our companions, to satisfy their carnivorous appetites; but they are us'd to go every year on the bank of a great river, where they meet with white men who are cloath'd; and with these they exchange their prisoners, for such things as they may have a fancy to. Myself and fifteen others were kept alive for that purpose, and were made to travel a very long way to the river side; but the white men did not come this year. Upon this, we were carried back towards the desert of *Drex-ara*, in order to wait till the next year. However, says the savage, I am sure that all my companions won't live so long; for four out of the sixteen have been eat since our return from the river. He afterwards told us in what manner he had escap'd, and how he was so happy as to meet with three of his countrey men; after having wandred for two months, without knowing whither they were going.

I HAVE

I HAVE since heard, that those white men, with whom the savages traded for their prisoners, were the *Spaniards* of *Pensacola*, who go up, at a certain season, the great river of the *Holy Ghost*; and purchase slaves for an inconsiderable quantity of brandy, or some merchandises of no value.

I ORDER'D the *Abaquis* to withdraw, after he had ended his relation; and the deep affliction with which I was seiz'd, not permitting me to attend to my wife's grief; I did, in an instant, what I not only had never done; but what I thought it impossible for me to do. I conceal'd in my heart, the deepest pangs; and tho' I was ready to sink under the weight of my own anguish; I yet had so much strength of mind as to assume an air of tranquillity; and thereupon endeavour'd to comfort my wife as well as I cou'd. But 'tis on this occasion that I am afraid, no one will henceforwards pity me. Such a part as I have been able to act, and which I shall now exhibit to my readers, will be look'd upon as so strange a one, and possibly so extraordinary and uncommon; that in case my readers are so good as to indulge me their belief, they will undoubtedly think that it merits admiration.

tion rather than pity. Before a person can be sensible to the tender emotions of compassion, he must either have been tortur'd with the pangs which another feels, or else know that his mind is capable of being affected by them. But no man, sure, ever labour'd under such calamities as mine, and indeed few will be able to comprehend them.

THE resolution I therefore form'd that instant, of suppressing the inward pangs which tortur'd my heart, became a rule to me; and I have since observ'd it with a surprizing strength of mind. However, I did not perceive the prodigiously difficult task I had set myself: But the great affection I had for my wife, whose soul I desir'd to fortify by my example, engag'd me to make this kind of vow in secret, which perhaps was too rash a one. I yet have been so much master of myself as to put it in execution, but then what pangs has it cost me! and how imbitter'd is the remembrance of it! Dearest *Fanny*! says I to my wife, we are to thank heaven for even suffering us to know what is become of your father. Providence can never fail to assist innocence and virtue. The truth of this he himself has prov'd, by thus falling into the hands of savages, who

who are not so barbarous as their companions; and the same protection will be indulg'd him to the end. Perhaps he may, e're this time, have been deliver'd up to those Whites, whom the *Abaquis* mention'd. These must either be *English*, *French* or *Spaniards*; and of what part soever of *Europe* they may be, he'll be safe, in case he's got out of the hands of the savages. Yes, says she, arguing but too justly on the subject of our fears; yes, provided he is got out of the hands of the savages; but what probability is there that he has got out of the hands of those bloody-minded wretches? 'Tis not above two months, according to the relation of the *Abaquis*, since they return'd from their great river; they won't return to it till next year, and who knows whether they'll spare my dear father's life so long? She burst into tears as she spoke these words; and her great tenderness representing the thing she fear'd in its most dreadful shapes; she seem'd to be under as great terror, as tho' she had seen his lordship really devour'd by savages. To comfort her, I observ'd, that as those savages were us'd to barter their prisoners, there was no room to doubt but they'd still continue to do it; besides, that I'd prevent



prevent the effects of their cruelty, I being resolv'd to put myself at the head of two thousand *Abaquis*; and to set out, by the direction of the savage who had accompanied the viscount, for the desert of *Drexara*; that heaven would conduct me in this enterprize, as it so nearly concern'd his goodness and justice; in fine, that I hop'd to meet with the viscount which was the only difficult point; and that I wou'd rescue him with the greatest ease.

My wife had too much judgment, to delude herself with false hopes. She was as sensible as I cou'd be, how difficult it wou'd be to put my design in execution; and this was the resolution she took that instant. I am persuaded, says she to me, that you'll never abandon my father, and that you'll perform your promise in all it's extent; but I am sure, that an attempt like this, will be very dangerous and uncertain. You cannot leave me here behind you. Consider what may happen to me in your absence? not to mention, that if you once abandon me, 'tis a thousand to one, whether ever we come together again. The only thing I cou'd then do, wou'd be to accompany you in your expedition; and then, we'll either meet with my father, or die in our search after

ter him—— How impracticable soever this proposal might be, I yet cou'd not, with any shadow of reason, oppose it. However, I laid down several reasons, which made it almost impossible, as we had not coaches, horses, &c. for either herself and my daughter; Mrs. *Riding* and our women. This appear'd to me an insurmountable difficulty. She answer'd, that she was sensible it was so, but assur'd me, that she was not any ways terrified upon that account; that they would travel on foot, as long as they were able to walk; that in case they should happen to be weary, they might easily make a kind of litters, which our *Abaquis* should carry; and that in case I set out with two thousand, they might carry it by turns, with very little trouble to themselves. I then mention'd provisions as another great difficulty; but that she assur'd me, she would run the hazard of wanting; and resolv'd, in like manner as I did, to depend on the prodigious number of wild beasts which are found in all parts of *America*, of which our savages, says she, may kill as many as they please.

WE'LL set out, says I, clasping her in my arms; we'll set out, dearest of creatures.

tures. I admire your courage, and will persuade my self that heaven wou'd not have inspir'd you with it, were we not to succeed. I acquainted the *Abaquis* with our resolution a little after ; but mention'd it only as an expedition, which I was desirous of undertaking, purely to deliver the viscount from his captivity, and revenge the death of our companions. The whole people accepted of the offer with the utmost joy ; but as I depended more on bravery and an exact discipline, than numbers ; I told them, that I wou'd have those only march under me, who had learn'd the military arts under Mr. *Youngster* ; and of these, I wou'd form a body of about 2000 strong and resolute fellows. Those whom we left behind us in the settlement, seem'd very loth to have me and my whole family leave 'em ; but they did not once suspect, that this was the last time they'd ever set eyes on us more. Upon any other occasion but this, we cou'd not have left this good people but with the utmost regret ; who, during our long stay among them, had discover'd the utmost docility, submission, and affection. I can never forget the great kindness they shew'd us ; and I have besought heaven, ever since I was among them, to increase the knowledge

lege and love of virtue, with which I endeavour'd to inspire them.

THO' I had fix'd upon a number who were to follow me in our expedition; I yet could not refuse some particular persons who had always given me the highest testimonies of their affection, their desire of accompanying me in it. I was heartily sorry that I cou'd not gratify old *Iglou* in this particular; who, not considering his great age and weakness, offer'd to follow me round the world. However, I permitted his daughter *Rem* to attend upon my wife; not to mention that her great fondness for us merited this recompense; I consider'd that she might be of great service to *Fanny* upon a thousand occasions; at last, we set out, after having besought God to smile upon our journey, and poured out our hearts before him in a most devout manner.

HEAVENS! what a setting out was this, and what an undertaking! I hardly knew whither to bend my steps. All I suppos'd, was, that as I was in *Florida* beyond the *Apalatian* mountains; the gulph of *Mexico* was to the south of me, and the coasts of the north sea to the east. I believ'd, that very probably the white men whom the savages had mention'd to me, were

*Spaniards.*

*Spaniards*, who came up some great river from the gulph of *Mexico*; for I did not know of any as far as the point of *Tegesta*, which was as broad as that the savage spoke to me of. With regard to the desert of *Drexara*, which is the name of it translated, I had never once heard the least mention of it: The only idea I cou'd have of its situation, was, from comparing his relation, with the opinion I entertain'd that the white men the *Abaquis* told me of, were *Spaniards*; and I concluded from thence, that this desert must be situated to the south of us, or a little more to the right, westward. Indeed, this did not agree with the way which the three savages whom I sent into *Carolina*, had gone; and with their meeting with the prisoner: But then I knew by their own discourse, that they had often travelled at random; and I judg'd by the great number of miles they travell'd, that they had gone prodigiously out of their way. Such were the lights, or rather the profound obscurity, which was to guide us in our unhappy voyage. I must nevertheless confess, in order that I may not give too terrible an idea of my perplexity; that I entertain'd another hope, without which it would have been the utmost folly for me,

to



to have thus thrown my self into a labyrinth; and this was, that I should meet with several nations who would set me in the way; and being accompanied with so great a body of men, I was not under any apprehensions from their cruelty and barbarity.

WE travell'd for the first week with no manner of difficulty. Tho' the weather was prodigiously hot, our *Abaquis* did not seem to faint. They carried the four litters in which the women were, without the least reluctance; and as they reliev'd one another, upon the least sign or symptom of weariness, they did not seem to be in the least fatigued. I encourag'd them as well as I cou'd, by marching at their Head; and finding that I stood in the greatest need of their assistance, I put on an air of resolution, purposely to animate them. Nevertheless, whether they were not as much inur'd to fatigue, as the wandering savages who are ever upon their feet; or that the heat and change of air might take away their spirits; a great number of them were on a sudden attack'd with a dangerous illness, which oblig'd us to stop. I thereupon made choice of an agreeable meadow, in which I resolv'd to continue  
for

for some days. This meadow was at a very little distance from a river, whose banks were cover'd with tufted trees, which afforded a most grateful shade, and kept off the burning rays of the sun. But notwithstanding this precaution, yet thirty of the bravest of my savages died in two days. The swift progress the disease made, shew'd but too plainly, that it was of a contagious nature. I lost fifteen men the day after; and word was brought me continually, that a great many others were brought to death's door. In less than seven days near two hundred were carried off, and there were eight hundred in a very languishing condition. As I was under the most terrible apprehensions, for fear my wife should catch the infection, I oblig'd her and her women, to retire at a distance from the main body; and forbid any savage, upon pain of death, to go near 'em. I order'd Mr. *Youngster* to take care of them; and in the mean time, I endeavour'd to find out some remedy against a disease, which made such sad havock among the poor *Abaquis*. But the brave, the faithful *Youngster*, was himself seiz'd with this deadly distemper; and I saw him breath his last, two days after, in the most dreadful agonies.

THE wrath of heaven pursued me. I was undoubtedly more to be pitied, than the many unhappy wretches who expir'd before my eyes; altho' my constitution was so good, as to preserve me from the infected air which I breath'd every instant. I was continually in the midst of the *Abaquis*, exhorting, comforting and enquiring into the nature and symptoms of their several distempers. I separated the sick from those who were not yet infected; I caus'd the dead bodies to be carried off, for fear they should spread the contagion; I flew up and down in all places, I myself assisted in the most laborious part of the work, and took more pains than the meanest of the savages. However, I would often consider, that the inconsiderate zeal I shew'd, might prove of fatal consequence to my wife. I was always afraid, at my going home to her in the evening, of infecting her with the contagious air I had breath'd. Upon this, I resolv'd to wash myself every day in the river before I went home to her; and not to wear the same skins with which I cover'd myself when I visited the savages. How dreadful wou'd have been the consequences, had I myself catch'd the distemper! dreadful fear! I diverted my  
mind

mind from that reflection, in the same manner as a criminal who is sentenc'd to die, does the thoughts of his execution. I wou'd assume, tho' this was the greatest pain to me, a chearful countenance whenever I went to my wife; and so far from acquainting her that the disease spread more and more, so as to carry off twelve, fifteen, and sometimes twenty *Abaquis* every day; I on the contrary told her that all our people grew better. She would feign as tho' she believ'd me; and at the same time that I thus palliated our evils, purposely to prevent her taking them too much to heart; she, on the other side, wou'd pretend an entire ignorance in that affair, for fear of giving me pain.

IN this dreadful calamity, 'twas a great happiness that herself, our little daughter, and the women, continued in perfect health. We spent three weeks in this place, and did not once see all that time, the least likelihood that our miseries wou'd be lessen'd. Near four hundred of my savages were dead, and as the infection still continued to spread, I was justly apprehensive that it wou'd sweep them all away. I therefore resolv'd to try what a change of air wou'd do; and accordingly order'd the camp to remove to an eminence, which

did not appear to be above a day's journey, from the wide-extended plains where we then lay. I commanded the savages to march off with all imaginable dispatch, but perceiv'd that they were not pleas'd with the news. Tho' the place I directed them to, lay at no great distance from us; yet as it wou'd carry us farther off from the valley of the *Abaquis*, some of them gave me to understand, that they were absolutely determin'd to return home as soon as possible. This was a fresh subject of uneasiness to me; however, I wou'd not insist upon their removal the way I directed, purposely that I might be the better able to find out directly how they might be dispos'd. I soon found, that they had assembled for several nights together, in order to consider what resolution it wou'd be proper for them to take; and as they were grown much more unruly since Mr. *Youngster's* death; they had murmur'd against me, as tho' I were the only cause of all their calamities. I therefore found 'em so exasperated, and so little dispos'd to obedience, that I was afraid they wou'd rebel in a little time against me. This must necessarily be of very fatal consequence. The least, and that which I must naturally expect, was, that



that they all would abandon me at once ; and by that means expose me and my whole family, to the mercy of wild beasts, or savages, who are equally cruel. I spent some days, in soliciting and entreating those whose fidelity I least suspected ; and besought them to do their utmost, to bring over their companions. This they endeavour'd, but to no purpose. Even the sight of five or six hundred of their countreymen, who were still sick ; and whom consequently they wou'd be oblig'd to leave behind 'em, did not make the least impression on the rebels ; and cou'd not engage 'em to stay, at least, till they were recover'd. None of the reasons I gave were any ways effectual, and they refus'd to listen to any of 'em ; like to a flock of sheep, who run impetuously together towards the same place, when they are excited by some impulse, the cause of which is even unknown to 'em. In a word, the once submissive, obliging *Abakis*, were now a multitude of capricious and inflexible savages.

I now look'd upon the evil as past all cure. The only remedy I cou'd think of, and which I resolv'd to try, ruin'd the whole affair ; as it gave those worthless wretches an opportunity of executing

their resolutions at once. I caus'd them to assemble round me; when reproaching them, haughtily, with their inconstancy and perfidy; I added, that I was nevertheless assur'd that these were few in number, and that great numbers among 'em were dispos'd to continue faithful; that I was desirous of knowing 'em, and distinguishing 'em in the honourable manner they deserv'd; and was very willing to let such as were otherwise, depart for ever from my presence, and return immediately home. I had flatter'd myself, that the fear of passing for a sett of perfidious creatures, would force them against their wills, to be obedient. Upon this I gave immediate orders for all such as were for abandoning me, to draw off to the left; and desir'd those of a different resolution, to go on the right. Having said these words, I look'd stedfastly upon 'em; and during some moments, not one of 'em offer'd to stir from his place. They gaz'd upon one another, with an air of astonishment and uncertainty. At last, some of the most rebellious running off to my left, they were soon follow'd by the greatest number. Scarce had they stood a moment, to see whether or no they might depend upon  
one

one another, but setting up a great shout, they turn'd their backs upon me, and flew like lightning towards their valley. There still remain'd about three hundred on my right, who I imagin'd wou'd adhere to me; but these seeing their countrymen take to their heels; and having look'd upon them as they were flying, as uncertain what they shou'd do; they made off likewise, and cou'd not be persuaded to come back a moment; tho' I begg'd, reproach'd, and did all I cou'd to engage their stay.

How wou'd it be possible for me to give an idea in this place, of my sorrow, and the surprize with which I was seiz'd! I was now left quite alone in the midst of the meadow. As the two *Englishmen* who surviv'd, were with my wife and the women; and as the place where the sick lay, was a quarter of a mile off, and shaded by trees; not one savage was left with me, from whom I cou'd obtain the feeble consolation which is found, when we reveal our woes to another. I had no design to acquaint my wife with these sad reverses; she wou'd have divided 'em with me, and her uneasiness wou'd only have fill'd me with despair; for which reason I was forc'd to conceal 'em, deep in my bo-

K 4

som,

from, tho' this was a mortal pain. Upon this I seated myself on the grass, in the very place where I stood. Tho' heaven seem'd to pour all its wrath upon me, I yet lifted up my eyes, and besought the creator to commiserate my sufferings. I begg'd of God, in case he did not think fit to indulge me the consolation which might lessen my sorrows; however to point out to me how I should act; and give me; at least, some little glimmerings of hope, in the deplorable state I was reduc'd to; and to which, I believ'd, no man but myself had been ever brought. Gracious God! says I a thousand times, thou canst not delight to see thy creatures in despair. If thy works were the effect of all-goodness, how canst thou take pleasure in destroying 'em? What is to be my fate? What will become of the viscount, my unhappy wife, and our innocent daughter? To what purpose is it to invoke thee, if thou art always deaf to my prayers? My God! hear me, and take pity of thy unhappy creatures.

HOWEVER, after having been thus tortur'd for some time, I summon'd up all my spirits, in order to draw from the circumstances of our misery, such weak resources as methoughts it afforded. I

at

at first suppos'd, that we had no other course to take, but to return back to the *Abaquis*. After I had duly consider'd the necessity there was that we shou'd do this, I repented from my heart, that I had not yielded to the impatience of the fugitives. But as this was to no purpose; I examin'd whether there was any probability of my being safe among the savages, after they had so basely abandon'd me. I imagin'd they would be afraid of my punishing 'em; and either a dread of shame or punishment, sometimes makes those complete villains, who were but partly so before. Nevertheless, I flatter'd myself that it wou'd be possible for me to recover their esteem by gentle treatment; but there were two difficulties which perplex'd me infinitely more. The first was, the dangers to which we should be expos'd in the journey. We were now going to be obnoxious to the insults of all those whom heaven might think fit to bring in our way; but 'twas equally dangerous which way soever we might shape our steps; nor should we have been safer, had we continued in the place where we were. All therefore that cou'd be done, was, to submit ourselves to providence, and to still implore its assistance. The second



obstacle was, the fatigue which must necessarily be undergone in a journey of ten days continuance, which was more than the two ladies and the women cou'd go through. Besides these, there remain'd *Rem* only and the two *Englishmen*; and as for the great number of savages who lay sick, I cou'd not hope for the least assistance from any of them. The two women wou'd be forc'd to walk on foot, how fatiguing soever this might be; and I resolv'd, in conjunction with *Rem*, to carry my wife's litter, and that the two *Englishmen* shou'd do the same service to Mrs. *Riding*.

I THEN began to think what wou'd become of the unhappy savages, whom we should be forc'd to leave behind us. The disease with which they were seiz'd, made 'em so weak and feeble, that they cou'd not so much as stand upon their legs. Death continued to make a havock among them daily, and my presence cou'd not afford them the least relief. Nevertheless, after having long ponder'd this matter, I found humanity wou'd not suffer me to leave so many poor wretches, in so melancholly a condition. I cou'd not, indeed, as was observ'd above, contribute in any manner to their  
cure;

cure; but then I observ'd that my visits were some consolation, which they even assur'd me in their expiring moments. This sufficiently determin'd me to stay with 'em so long as any should continue alive; and do 'em all the good offices I possibly cou'd. I consider'd, farther, that they had undertaken this journey purely for my sake, and in compliance with my commands; and therefore I thought that gratitude oblig'd me to do, what tenderness and humanity prompted me to indulge 'em. We were not afraid of wanting provisions. Our perfidious deserters, having hunted after wild beasts for three weeks together, had left us a prodigious quantity of these; and also eggs of different sorts of birds, of which we made our most delicious repasts.

THIS was the most rational plan that heaven cou'd possibly have inspir'd me with, in so difficult a juncture; and the only one it was proper for me to fix upon. But my evil star was to get the better of all my schemes, either to destroy, or turn 'em wholly to my ruin.

I RESOLV'D not to visit my wife sooner than I us'd to do; for fear she shou'd be alarm'd, to see me more uneasy than usual. I therefore did not go to her till the evening, after having visited the poor,

sick *Abaquis*; and inform'd 'em of the perfidy of their countrey-men, which fill'd 'em with the highest indignation. They were so strongly affected with the promise I made to stay with 'em, that they assur'd me they cou'd almost die with pleasure for my sake; and these testimonies of their gratitude, made so deep an impression on me, that I thought this alone overpaid all I had done, or cou'd do, for them. Night being come, I went to my wife, who did not yet know that the savages had left us; I having fix'd her in a by-place. It stood behind a little hill, which separated it from the meadow; and being shaded by very lofty trees, the pestilential air did not annoy 'em in the least. I made her a hut of the branches and leaves of trees, in which she cou'd sit commodiously enough with her women; so that they were in no fear from infection. I still continued to wash myself every evening in the river, and to change my clothes a little before I came into the hut. Tho' I was again prey'd upon by my wonted anxiety, at my leaving the sick; and had not one soothing reflection till I saw my wife; I nevertheless assum'd a chearful countenance upon my coming into her hut. She immediately enquir'd how I did, and whether the  
savage

savages were better. They have left us, says I, with a very compos'd air. Had they staid, not one of 'em wou'd have escap'd; we ourselves shall be forc'd to return back to the valley, as soon as our sick are either dead or recover'd.

NOTWITHSTANDING I had deliver'd myself without the least apparent uneasiness, she yet was prodigiously surpriz'd; when looking stedfastly upon me, in order, if possible, to read my soul thro' my eyes; and as tho' she were persuaded that this was owing to some extraordinary accident. Mrs. *Riding* seem'd no less astonish'd; and they both endeavour'd to make me explain myself farther. I continued, however, to conceal the truth from 'em; and even confess'd, that there was some justice in the reproaches they made me, for not being so prudent as to oblige a few of the *Abaquis* to stay behind, in order to serve as a guard. In this manner I was oblig'd to sustain the whole weight of this terrible event; and I accustom'd myself, more than ever, to put on a philosophical countenance, even when prey'd upon by the most cruel pangs.

'Twas five weeks, which was to me like a continual martyrdom, of so many years, before the sickness abated  
among

among the savages. The perpetual reflections which I made on my ill fate; my fears, which cou'd not lessen, so long as I did not see any glimmerings of hope; the struggles I made to conceal my anxiety; tortur'd me more during that short time, than all the past misfortunes of my life. At last the infection ceas'd; and there scarce were left threescore of the *Abaquis*, among five hundred who lay sick when the rest ran away. I yet thought to set out with these few who had escap'd the wrath of heaven; and desir'd my wife to give me her opinion of it, who shed tears when I mention'd it to her. I imagin'd, as she did, that her grief proceeded wholly from the necessity we were under, of laying aside our search after the viscount; a reason, which justified both her sorrow and mine. But she has since confest to me, that her heart was then tortur'd with sharper pangs, than it was natural for our present woes to excite; whether it were, that the uncertainty of what would become of us, rais'd such tumults in her breast as she cou'd not account for; or that it arose from something which whisper'd to her the dreadful calamities we should undergo, before we left the *West-Indies*.

THE



THE incident I am going to relate, shall be told with the utmost simplicity; and is of so tragical a nature, that it does not require to be heightened by ornaments, to move a reader, who is not a barbarian; and is not ashamed of being a man, that is sensible to the tender emotions of pity and compassion. However, I shall not pretend to describe what I felt. Expression was invented by art; a faithless mirror, which can represent but very imperfectly, all the strong, the intimate sensations of nature.

WE set out. My wife trembled as we were going away; she carried our dear little daughter in her arms. I embrac'd, with the utmost tenderness, these dear objects of my affection; and recommended them to the superior powers, who are appointed to watch over innocence. Notwithstanding the *Abaquis* were so weak, they yet wou'd not suffer me to assist in carrying 'em; but shar'd this fatigue among themselves, and reliev'd one another by turns. Mrs. *Riding* was also carried. I walk'd at my wife's side, always deeply involv'd in thought; but especially on the reception we might expect to meet with from the *Abaquis*.

WE had now travell'd two days, and easily

easily found the way by which we came. Some of my savages, whom I had bid to go on before for our greater safety, and order'd to cast their eyes incessantly round them; stopt on the top of a hill. After having gaz'd a few moments about them, they came running towards us with prodigious speed. As they were near a quarter of a mile from us, I waited for their coming up; hoping, in case they brought ill news, that I should have time to retire either to the right or left with all my people. I kept my eyes continually upon my scouts. Scarce were they got to the bottom of the hill, when I saw thirty or forty persons on the top of it, who seem'd to pursue 'em; but stopt on a sudden, when they saw so great a number; all my savages being now got round me. As it wou'd be an easy matter for us to engage twenty or thirty men, I did not think it prudent to discover the least symptoms of fear; especially as they had discover'd us; and that it would be impossible for us to escape 'em, in case they should resolve to come up with us. I even resolv'd, after a moment's deliberation, to detach part of my savages, who should advance towards 'em with the two *Englishmen* at their head, to prevent an attack,

tack, in case they came upon a villainous design; and I myself stay'd behind to guard my wife, having fifteen of the *Abaquis* with me, who were to be as a *corps de reserve*. Whilst I was thus dividing my savages, I saw a much greater number of men advance upon the hill; so that I believ'd there might be at last near five or six hundred of them. I then found that I stood in need of the protection of heaven; and that it would be impossible for me to get out of this danger, either by stratagem or force of arms.

THOU knowest, my God! with what warmth I invok'd thy aid. The several deep sighs that came from my heart, were so many ardent prayers, by which I begg'd for thy powerful succour. I conjur'd my wife not to stir from the litter; and confess'd to her in one word, that we were in the utmost danger. However, says I, my dear; don't let fear overcome you, and let us not do any thing imprudently: Heaven does not sometimes indulge its succour, till the danger is extreme; and perhaps it has reserv'd it for us till this instant. My heart was so oppress'd as I spoke these words, that I was not capable of entertaining the least hopes. I clasp'd her for  
a moment.

a moment to my breast, when she begg'd me not to endanger my life, but to remember that I ow'd it to her, and our dear daughter. I made her no answer, for fear of heightning her sorrows, by letting her see mine; and squeezing her hand, I left her; fully determin'd to advance in person against our enemies.

THIS I was prompted to from two reasons; first from the fear I was under, that in case we should fight too near the place where the women stood, they would be in danger from the arrows; the second was, a strong desire I had to try the disposition of these savages before we engag'd, or suffer'd them to come nearer. My scouts could not tell me any thing more than what I myself had seen. They had taken to their heels, as I before observ'd, upon finding themselves pursued. Having therefore not one moment to lose, I left the *Englishmen* with my wife; and commanding my sixty *Abaquis* to follow me; I march'd towards the enemy with an air of resolution, who advanc'd in much better order, than savages are us'd to do. Being perhaps surpriz'd to find us so intrepid, tho' we were so few in number, they halted at about an hundred paces from us. I still advanc'd forward; intending

intending to go off from the rest, and present myself before 'em, in such a manner as shew'd I sued for peace. But scarce had we advanc'd a few steps farther, when one of the *Abaquis* told me, we were undone; the savages before us being the *Rouintons*. These words fill'd me with inexpressible terror. Heavens! the *Rouintons*! I was motionless like a statue, not knowing what course to take. The enemy, who presently discover'd my companions to be *Abaquis*, discharg'd a shower of arrows upon us. My savages had hitherto stood their ground, being persuaded that my great skill in war, wou'd make 'em victorious; but the instant they saw what enemies they had to engage with, they immediately took to their heels. If the smallness of their number, made their flight excusable, it yet was not of any service to them; for their cruel enemies pursued 'em so closely, that not a soul of them escap'd.

WHEN they began to run away, I was come within thirty paces of the *Rouintons*. Possibly, I myself shou'd have fled, had my wife, my child and Mrs. *Riding* been out of danger; but as matters were otherwise, I was determin'd to offer mine as a sacrifice, to preserve those who were dearer.



dearer to me than myself; and in case I cou'd not make it of service to 'em, the only happiness I cou'd wish, was, to lose it. A moment's reflection suggested, that resistance wou'd be vain; and thereupon I threw down my arms, to shew the *Rouintons* I did not intend to make use of them. Some of these took me prisoner, while the rest were pursuing the *Abaquis*. They soon perceiv'd that I was not born among the people, whom they hated with so much inveteracy; they gaz'd for some time upon my dress, and did not discover the least signs, as tho' they intended to use me ill.

THO' their language differ'd pretty much from that of the *Abaquis*, I yet found it bore so much affinity with it, that I flatter'd myself I cou'd make 'em understand me. Brave people, says I to 'em, in a most submissive tone of voice, I am not your enemy. I am an unhappy stranger, whom chance has conducted into this desert; and who was coming to you with the *Abaquis*, purely to sue for your protection and friendship. I implore your pity for my own life, and for that of my family who are going to fall into your hands; suffer your hearts to be touch'd with compassion, for a man that  
never

never did you the least injury. These merciless savages look'd upon one another with a grin, or rather gnash'd their teeth in a most dreadful manner. Their glances were strong and sparkling, but cruel and malicious, like those of a tyger. They were short of stature and squat; and their mouths were frightfully wide. I judg'd that they had not yet discover'd my wife; for having turn'd my eyes towards her leafy hut, as soon as I had done speaking to them, they ran towards it. The most nimble soon got up to her, during which a few of 'em led me after 'em, holding me fast by my two arms. My heart then sunk within me; and I thought the fatal moment was at hand, when, what I valued above all things, would be unmercifully butcher'd.

I WAS now come up to the litter, when I found that my dearest creature was fallen into a swoon, with our sweet babe in her arms, just ready to drop from 'em, and to have its brains dash'd out. Perhaps the savages thought my wife was dead, for they did not offer to succour her; but were taken up with gazing upon Mrs. *Riding* and the two women; who had not fainted away, but then the fright they were in, bereav'd them of their speech.

speech. As I did not value what became of me on this dreadful occasion, I forc'd out of the hands of those who held me; and threw myself upon my wife's face, in such an excess of grief as it wou'd be impossible to describe. I supported the dear infant with one hand; and endeavour'd, at the same time, to revive my wife, by putting my lips to hers, as it were, to inspire her with a little of the strength with which I was still inform'd. At last she open'd her eyes. Where is my daughter, says she? and seeing the babe in my arms; Alas! my dear Mr. *Cleveland*, says she with a sigh she scarce had strength to vent; give me my child; don't leave me; my heart can bear up no longer; are we not undone? I had but just time to speak a comfortable word or two. God, says I, cannot abandon us, without being guilty of the greatest cruelty. Take a little courage; the savages have not yet us'd me ill; and who knows but they may commiserate our distress?

WHILE this was doing, those who had pursued the *Abaquis*, having soon overtaken 'em, return'd in triumph with their prey; and as they came forwards, broke into such shouts of joy, as chill'd the blood in my veins. These were got up  
I with

with us in a moment, when so many of 'em crouded about my wife, out of curiosity, to see her, that they drove me at a great distance from her. However, they did not once attempt to use her ill; but then she was almost frightened to death, to see herself thus become the gazing-stock of a multitude of hideous savages; some of whom took her hands and view'd them, darting their fierce eyes upon her at the same time. I still held our dear infant in my arms. 'Twas to no purpose to employ entreaties, nor cou'd we be once heard, amidst the tumultuous joys of those furious savages. To which among them cou'd I have directed myself? They seem'd to despise me, and to look upon me as a cowardly, mean-spirited wretch, seeing me carry the child in my arms, with so dejected an air; insomuch that they wou'd not so much as look upon me. I at last got nearer to my wife; and the croud moving off, I sat down by her litter. I know not yet, says I, dearest creature, what providence intends to do with us; but let us hope that heaven will be still gracious: consider it has already wrought almost a miracle in our favour, by suffering these barbarians to spare us, in the first transports of their fury.

fury. My wife was so oppress'd with grief, that she cou'd hardly make me one word of answer. Give me, my dear babe, says she; which I did. Upon this, her tears, which sorrow had suppress'd till this moment, began to stream from her eyes, as soon as she had got the infant in her arms. She hugg'd it, as tho' she were resolv'd never to part from it. O Lord! says she, how happy should I be, were I once out of this vale of miseries; but take pity on my husband, and my poor, helpless daughter. 'Twas some consolation, to see Mrs. *Riding* and her women about her, they not being denied that liberty.

I TREMBLED to think how all this would end. The savages were assembled round, at about seven or eight yards from us; the unhappy *Abaquis* also standing in the middle, whose fate the *Rouintons* seem'd now deciding. At last the crowd began to wheel off, and divided themselves into six bands: The threescore *Abaquis* were likewise divided in the same manner, and each band took an equal number of them. Immediately they search'd for wood round about the forest; and made other preparations which I suppos'd to be the prelude to a dreadful sacrifice; for I did not doubt but the *Rouintons* intended



tended to burn their enemies alive. This made me bewail their fate; and I was seiz'd with the most cruel pangs, when I found I should be a spectator on this shocking occasion.

BUT a circumstance which surpriz'd me prodigiously, was, to see 'em not only chearful, but even so gay as to sing; tho' they had appear'd so dejected but a moment before, and cou'd not but know the cruel death they were to suffer. One wou'd have concluded, that they were determin'd to insult their merciless victors; and that being lost to all hopes, they were unanimously resolv'd to brave their enemies, and not discover the least tokens of weakness or fear. I even heard these ill-fated wretches cry aloud, that they themselves had treated the *Rouintons* after the very same manner; and had either cut to pieces, or burnt, a multitude of 'em in their last wars. At last, the fires being lighted, the *Rouintons* of each band took only three of their prisoners; when instead of throwing them into the flames, as I imagin'd they wou'd have done, they tied 'em to stakes which stood very close to the fire; so that these unhappy *Abaquis* were tortur'd with the heat of the fire, which soon chang'd the colour of

VOL. III. L their

their skin. Thus were they roasted alive by slow degrees, which, however, had not the power to shake their resolution. Their companions, tho' they waited the like doom, did nevertheless exhort them to behave manfully; at the same time that their barbarous enemies shouted for joy; and dancing round, treated 'em in a most injurious manner.

THIS was but the opening of a scene, the conclusion of which was to be infinitely more terrible. When that the three *Abaquis* out of each band were quite dead; the *Rouintons* loos'd their bodies from the stake, which being quite roasted, they sat down in a ring, and prepar'd to distribute these dreadful eatables among themselves. Accordingly the carcasses were cut up, a piece of which were given to each of them, when they began the most horrid of all feasts, in the utmost raptures of joy. We, till now, had preserv'd so much strength of mind as to look upon all they were doing; but this last sight was so prodigiously shocking, that we cou'd not view it any longer, and thereupon we hung down our heads and shut our eyes. We continued in this posture, till they had ended their execrable meal; and had not the power to

once

once open our lips, to express the horror with which we were seiz'd.

I KNOW not what my wife thought of all this; but as for my own ideas, they were confus'd beyond imagination. The judicious reader will believe, that my anguish did not proceed altogether from the sight of so barbarous a scene; and that, at the same time, as a bare sensation of humanity, made me so deeply concern'd for the sad fate of the *Abaquis*, I was tore to pieces with reflections of another kind. Altho' the treatment which the *Rouintons* had hitherto shewn us, was far from barbarous; besides my knowing certainly, that as it was not their general custom to devour men, but only on those occasions in which most of the *Americans* are cannibals, I mean with regard to the prisoners they take in war; I therefore cou'd not conclude that they would put us to death, because they had us'd the *Abaquis* in so cruel a manner; yet notwithstanding this reflection, my fears were as great as ever. 'Tis in vain for the mind to arm itself with fortitude; our fears are not always proportionable to the greatness of the danger, but to the value we have for those things which we are afraid of losing. Had I not just reason to be seiz'd with

the most terrible apprehensions, considering the barbarity which threatned those who were so dear to me? Were we not in the hands of a multitude of cruel savages? Wou'd it be possible for us to make the least opposition, in case they shou'd take it into their heads to use us ill? — I then would say to myself; no, they'll never have such an inclination—— Alas! my reason was not strong enough, to calm so dreadful, so natural an apprehension. But farther, supposing that the example of the *Abaquis* ought not to have alarm'd me; cou'd I yet say what might happen the next moment? Among the numberless things I had to dread, was there one which could naturally inspire me with the least hopes? What could we expect from the greatest indulgence of fortune, but the extremes of misery?— In this manner I view'd my evils in all lights. So far from feeding myself with imaginary hopes, I daily represented to my imagination, the worst that cou'd possibly happen; and after I had thus consider'd things in their most dreadful shapes, it so happen'd, that the blow with which I was threatned, was more terrible than any thing I had yet figur'd to myself.

THE six bands of the *Rouissant*, had  
posted

posted 'emselfes in such a manner, that they almost surrounded us. After the bloody execution was ended, the greatest part of them fell asleep. I found, however, that they had sense enough to observe some order and take a few precautions. I observ'd that they appointed a guard to watch over the prisoners. Some of these came up to me. I took that opportunity to beseech them, in the softest terms, to tell me what was to be our fate. But, whether it were that they did not rightly understand me; or had our little company in the utmost contempt; they answer'd me only by a horrid grin. I then endeavour'd to move 'em by my prayers and entreaties, but 'twas all to no purpose. When night was come, we were guarded as strictly as the *Abaquis*; and the next day, the same cruel feast was again made, which was to last till all the *Abaquis* were devour'd, and this happen'd four days after. By good fortune we still had our provisions, and these they did not touch. But I cou'd scarce persuade my poor, dear wife, to eat a little, in order to support nature.

At last, our enemies having nothing farther to do in the place where we then were, my blood curdled in my veins when



I reflected on the fate which perhaps attended us. I observ'd all their motions; they now were preparing to set out, when twenty-five or thirty of 'em coming up to me, bid us rise and follow 'em. We obey'd the command instantly. I intended that the two *Englishmen* should carry Mrs. *Riding's* litter, and *Rem* and I my wife's; but the barbarous wretches seeing this, took the litters from us, which they broke to pieces, and forc'd us to walk. I then took up the child in my arms, and supported my wife with the other. I bid the two *Englishmen* lend the same assistance to Mrs. *Riding*, who was so far advanc'd in years, and so corpulent, that she cou'd not walk an hundred steps without a support. We walk'd for about half an hour in this manner, when Mrs. *Riding* declar'd, that it would be impossible for her to go a step farther; and thereupon, venting a deep sigh, she told me, that as she was not able to go any farther, she was resolv'd to die in the place where we stood. Immediately something seem'd to whisper to me, that her death was at hand, and thereupon I besought her to summon up her spirits, but 'twas in vain. But as she cou'd not be prevail'd with to rise up; or rather, as she had not strength enough

enough to do it, the savages came up. They view'd her for some time; and having consulted together for some time, they all shouted after they had taken their resolutions, and thereupon most of them came and seated themselves round us. Unhappily my arm was so much tir'd with carrying my dear, little girl, that I was forc'd to give her to one of my wife's women. This the *Rouintons* took notice of; and possibly occasion'd her being included in the dreadful sentence which was pass'd on Mrs. *Riding*. As they wanted to make all the haste possible, they therefore were resolv'd to rid 'emselves of every thing that wou'd retard it.

I SEEK for reasons to justify their barbarity. Alas! I seek for some; for who otherwise cou'd ever believe, that there were monsters under a humane shape, capable of perpetrating such bloody crimes? Mrs. *Riding* was immediately seiz'd by a dozen of those inhuman brutes. She cried aloud for mercy, but as she was soon surrounded with a multitude of these butchers, their shouts soon drown'd her voice, and I presently lost sight of her. A moment after, some of the savages tore my dear, harmless infant, out of the hands of the  
woman

woman who carried her. Alas! knowing their design but too well, I flung myself upon 'em in a transport of grief; I threw down several of 'em who offer'd to stop me, and got at last to my unhappy child. But what could I do after all? She was carried away in an instant, and stopping me, they beat me to the ground. They likewise stopt my unfortunate wife, who had rush'd with no less fury, than myself on our barbarous enemies. They likewise stopt our *Englishmen*, and the two women; and as I still continued to struggle tho' I was on the ground, they tied my hands and feet, and did the same to all the rest of us.

It was now impossible for me to stir. My reason, which seem'd to be darkned by the violent tumults of my soul, abandon'd me so far, that I gnaw'd the ground in the first transports of my rage; and now considering no longer, what I ow'd to my wife any more than myself, I was incapable for some moments of once thinking or reflecting. A violent throbbing at my heart, bereav'd me even of the power to breath one single complaint. A few interrupted words broke from me, such as oh! my daughter! Alas! my child! O! barbarous villains thus to tear her from me!

me! My face, which I prest against the ground, was bath'd in tears; and the racks, the scourges which tore my heart to pieces, were a thousand times more painful, than the pangs of death are thought to be.

NEVERTHELESS, my wife lay, at a little distance from me, in much the same posture. More happy than myself in these first moments of horror, she had fainted away, and was equally motionless as tho' she had been in the arms of death. It was not long before I began to think of her, and to consider how much she wanted my assistance. I open'd my eyes, when I saw her in the condition I just now mention'd. Let the reader figure to himself, in case this be possible, my sore affliction; divided equally, between the impulses of paternal tenderness, and those of conjugal love. I recover'd my voice, when I address'd her in the most tender, the most melting expressions. She was pale, and seem'd to have lost all her vital warmth; and 'twas a long time before she recover'd from her swoon. The *Rouintons* who stood round, gaz'd upon us without shewing the least pity, or once offering to assist us. As she did not discover the least symptoms of life, I concluded she was really dead, and im-

mediately resolved not to survive her long. I threw myself down by her, and begg'd of heaven to put a period to my torments, by discharging me of the intolerable burthen, life; and thereupon shut my eyes, with a firm resolution never to open them more.

WHEN I begg'd of God to take me out of this vale of miseries, 'twas a favour I sued for, which however was not indulg'd me. 'Twou'd have been a great happiness, both for my wife and myself, had the earth open'd, and swallow'd us up. But we were sentenc'd to live many years more, and to a long course of sufferings. I continued above a quarter of an hour in the posture above mention'd. Having so often call'd upon death, I was firmly perswaded it was not far off; and the reflection that my torments wou'd be at an end, did possibly lessen them. However, as my wife discover'd, by an almost insensible motion, that she was not yet dead; I rous'd from this sad lethargy which for some minutes had benumb'd all my faculties, in order to assist my dear wife, so far as it might lay in my power. I call'd her by her name; she answer'd me by mine; and a moment after ask'd me, with a most melancholly tone  
of



of voice, what was become of our daughter? Love, still stronger than all our evils, soon shew'd that she did not think our misfortunes so great as they really were. I resolv'd to heighten the error, by diverting her fear from that which should naturally be the object of it; and being pleas'd with myself for hitting upon this thought, as it might prevent her being plung'd into a fresh excess of grief; this alone enabled me to strengthen the tone of my voice, and to form such an answer as ought to sooth her imagination. You know, my dearest, says I, that God has suffer'd the *Rouintons* to force away our babe; but whithersoever they may carry it, be perswaded that the divine protection will never forsake the tender innocent. This is a misfortune which is not to be remedied at this time. They have hurried away Mrs. *Riding*. Probably, as they design to carry us farther, they thought proper to send 'em both to some neighbouring hamlet, in order that they might not retard our journey. Alas! says she, what have they done with our daughter? I won't live a moment longer, in case they don't restore her to my arms. I interrupted her, in order to confirm her still more, in the opinion I per-

ceiv'd she still entertain'd. I reproach'd her, but in the most tender terms, for talking of dying, in case the child was not brought back. You love her then, says I, more than you do me? and will not be prompted to live, from my presence, and the never-dying affection which I bear you? Be assur'd that the child will be restor'd to us; a happy chance, such as we have been favour'd with a thousand times, may give her back to us, at a time when we least expect it. But what will become of me, in case you should obstinately persist in your resolution of dying? And what construction can I put upon your love, in case it does not engage you to prefer living for my sake, to death and the grave? I added a great many other very cogent reasons, without allowing her time to answer them; and made her at last confess, that in what manner soever heaven might please to dispose of our daughter and all that belong'd to us; we ought to comfort ourselves with the reflection, that we were sure of being dear to one another; and to consider it as a very great happiness, that the barbarians had not separated us from one another.

NOTHING less than an extraordinary  
assistance

assistance from heaven; could have inspir'd me with resolution sufficient, to lessen my wife's despair; for having turn'd my head as I was speaking to her, I perceiv'd about an hundred steps from us, a flame that rose above the heads of the savages who were seated round it; when I did not doubt but my dearest child, and poor Mrs. *Riding*, were then roasting, in order to be afterwards devour'd by our enemies. Let a father, in case there is any one whose heart is as tender as mine, fancy himself for one moment in my condition; let him consider my torments, and then form a judgment of 'em; and in case he feels, that he is mov'd to compassion at the bare recital of this story, let him think, how great my torments must be; and then let him allow me the sad advantage I claim; that of being the most unhappy man that ever liv'd.

I THEREFORE put so great a constraint upon myself, as not only to disguise the excess of my anguish from my wife, but even to prevent her discovering the dreadful flames above mention'd, a circumstance which very possibly wou'd have fill'd her with alarms. I seated myself down in such a manner, that I hindred her from seeing any thing on that side. I even gave her  
to

to understand, that the savages were assembled at some distance from us, only to pitch upon those persons who were to convey our daughter and Mrs. *Riding* to the hamlet that lay nearest to us. With regard to the manacles wherewith both our hands were fastned, and which had been put upon hers while she lay in a swoon; I confess that the savages had done this, in order to prevent our escape. In fine, I spoke with so much composure of mind, and answer'd all her objections with such an air of tranquillity; that in case I did not lessen her grief, I prevented those transports of despair, with which she would have been seiz'd, had she known the inhuman scene that was then going forwards.

OUR people stood very near us. These saw the fire as plain as I did, and had the same sad apprehensions as myself; however, they saw that I did my utmost to conceal, what I believ'd those cruel butchers were about. 'Twas not till two months after, that she was inform'd of our unhappy babe, and poor Mrs. *Riding's* death; and I took care not to let her hear the dreadful circumstances of it.

I LAY by, and talk'd with her, till such time as the return of the savages, show'd

show'd that they had satiated their horrid appetites. I then held out my arms, as tho' I besought 'em to take off our manacles, which they thought proper to do. I then oblig'd my wife to take a little sustenance, which however I was some time before I cou'd prevail with her to do. I was afraid she wou'd now be so weak, that it would be impossible for her to walk; which could not but fill me with the most dreadful alarms; but it happen'd fortunately for us, that the savages had resolv'd to spend the night in the place where we then were. I employ'd part of it in soothing her grief; and I did not exhort her to take a little sleep, till after she had promis'd me to endeavour as much as possible to be chearful. 'Twill hardly be believ'd, that as she was in so ill a state of health, and of so delicate a constitution, she yet had strength enough to bear up against so much grief and fatigue, particularly during the six weeks which we spent in this manner among the *Rouintons*; oblig'd to undergo almost every day a painful march, and be expos'd in the night to the inclemencies of the weather. But what might she not go through, considering the two motives which animated her; her affection

tion



tion for a father, and love for a husband? My wife lov'd me as dearly as it was possible for woman to love. A bare word, the most insignificant expression from me, wou'd alone call up her spirits, and make her intrepid in the greatest dangers. She had very near as great an affection for the viscount her father. The uncertainty of his fate; the dangers which she trembled to think he was perpetually expos'd to; the hopes, but faint and remote ones, which she entertain'd, of meeting one day with him again, supported her daily in the midst of her fatigues and anxieties. That was the perpetual theme of our discourse, till the unhappy day on which we lost our daughter; and tho' this pierc'd her to the heart, she yet combated her grief with the utmost resolution. Moreover, altho' the *Rouintons* were such barbarians, they did not hinder us from employing the greatest endeavours, particularly in the night, to procure her such conveniencies, as our unhappy state permitted. We had brought some skins from the habitation of the *Abakis*: With these we made a bed for her: and the assistance of her women, and the two *Englishmen* who were ever ready to serve her; prevented her from  
doing

doing any thing that might endanger her health. If I may presume to speak it, without lessening the merits of what my dear wife suffer'd for me; I was infinitely more wretched in our common misfortunes. I don't speak of the pains and fatigues which oppress the body, for mine seem'd season'd to them. But what idea will not the reader entertain of the torments of my soul, when he considers that I was rack'd by my own pains; by those of others; and that I was constrain'd, not only to suppress them all, but also to summon up all my reason, to enable me to counsel others; tho' I myself was forc'd every instant, to struggle prodigiously in order to support myself.

As the savages did not acquaint us, what their intentions were in this rambling up and down, we were carried about for a long time, entirely in the dark, as to what they intended to do with us; and without the least appearance of our ever being extricated from our miserable condition. I pass over a thousand difficulties which we encounter'd and got over. Providence, which had hitherto treated me with so much rigour, was however very indulgent to me, in thus preserving my wife's health. It likewise prepared me  
some

some moments repose, after the numberless evils which had beset me ever since my leaving *France*. I nevertheless was oblig'd to pay very dear for it; and thus suffer, so long as I liv'd, the decree by which I was sentenced, not to taste any pleasure, but what was embitter'd with pain.

AFTER having wander'd about for six weeks, during which it was an easy matter for me to perceive; that the *Rouintons* did not steer any certain course; and that they rambled up and down in quest of prisoners, they now seem'd to be going directly for some place; and observing that they did this for some days, I no longer doubted of it. Seeing that they advanc'd towards the South, I took notice of it to my wife, who was overjoy'd upon that account; because we were both persuaded, that in case we could ever have the least hopes of meeting with his lordship, it would be that way. The *Rouintons* had a considerable number of captives along with them; and we suppos'd that they intended to carry them to the place where they usually made their abode. They therefore made such great diligence, that we soon arriv'd in their new habitation, where they were receiv'd with the utmost joy

joy by their wives and children. We were guarded with the strictest care, during the time that they spent in unbending themselves after the fatigues of their journey. As soon as they had taken some repose, they oblig'd us, at a moment's warning, to set out again with them. Very little time was employ'd in this new expedition. In less than two days we got to a vast forest, into which we advanc'd a considerable way; and were surpriz'd to find ourselves surrounded on a sudden by a numberless multitude of other savages, who receiv'd us with the greatest acclamations. I could never learn the name of this people, and what kind of traffick they carried on, with the *Rouintons*; but in reflecting on the manner in which we were receiv'd, I judg'd, that these after having been in the countries adjacent to the *Abaquis*, had retir'd to the spot whither we then were; and that they engag'd themselves by a treaty, or by their own free will, to furnish them with slaves. The *Rouintons* went away a little after they had deliver'd us up. Whatever might be our fate in this change of condition, I thank'd heaven for having freed us from our barbarous tyrants. In recollecting the terrors with which I had been fill'd during my abode among

among them; I started a reflection which would have increased them in case it had occur'd to me before. What cruel usage must I naturally have expected, had the *Rouintons* known that I had been the chief instrument of their ruin; and the person who had caus'd such hard and severe terms of peace to be offer'd them, by Mr. *Youngster* and the *Abaquis*? Heaven, who was determin'd not to quite complete my ruin, undoubtedly prevented their entertaining such a reflection. Besides, as they had found no more *Abaquis* with me, and met with me at so great a distance from the habitation; they cou'd hardly suppose me to be the formidable governour, whose reputation had struck them with terror; not to mention, that as they did not see Mr. *Youngster*, they did not once suspect who I was. Be that as it will, this happy change was a signal favour which heaven indulg'd me. Our new Masters treated us with the greatest humanity. They confin'd us, with fifty three prisoners more, in a place surrounded with stakes, of a great height and thickness, and cover'd with branches of trees, which secur'd us from the inclemencies of the weather. We were very well fed. 'Tis true indeed, that their cramming



cramming us in this manner, fill'd me with the most baleful apprehensions during some days; and I imagin'd, that they perhaps intended to feed upon us, after having fattened us as they thought proper. However, the air and behaviour of the savages, who did not discover the least severity in any of their actions, set my mind at ease in that particular. I even began to entertain a hope, which was afterwards happily fulfill'd. I remember'd that the *Abaquis* had told me of a nation of savages, who trade with the *European Colonies* for slaves; and not being able to form any other judgment of the kind treatment which we met with from them, I imagin'd that we should be sold with the companions of our captivity. I communicated this reflection to my wife, who was soon persuaded that I had guess'd the very thing; but I cannot say whether I may give the name of joy, to the emotions my discourse seem'd to excite in her. The remembrance of her father, and that of her daughter, employing her whole thoughts; she declar'd, that she could not consider as a happiness, nor consequently wish for a circumstance, which would remove her every day farther from her child; and perhaps make her lose all hopes of our seeing any more our  
 dear

dear babe, or her fond father. I had nothing to object to these just reflections; and was therefore oblig'd to reduce myself to such general motives of consolation, as I drew from the will of heaven, and the necessity we were under of following the unhappy current of our ill fortune, which it was not yet in our power to divert.

At last, the savages thinking we had now enjoy'd time sufficient for our complete recovery, they let us out of our confinement, and gave us to understand that we must follow them: We obey'd, and travell'd four days. At the beginning of the fifth, we arriv'd on the bank of a large river, where we were made to stop. A great number of branches, and trunks of trees, which were scatter'd up and down, shew'd that the place was sometimes inhabited by human creatures. We spent some days here, uncertain what would be our fate. However, I was still confirm'd in my opinion, that we should be sold either to *Europeans* or savages. About a week after our arrival, the savages who guarded us, shouted on a sudden for joy; and turning about to look what might be the occasion of it, I saw five or six large boats rowing towards us. I soon discover'd that they were *Europeans* by their dress, and 'twas now that my

my heart was sensible to the strongest emotions of joy. Accordingly I lifted up my eyes to heaven, clasp'd my wife to my bosom; and was persuaded that part of my prayers, at least, were heard. The boats came up to us in an instant, and I knew that the sailors in them were *Spaniards*. But of what countrey soever they might be, they were men, and not a company of brutish and insensible savages; and 'twas a most agreeable reflection to us to consider, that we were now going to be with rational creatures, with whom we might converse.

NEVERTHELESS, my wife put a quite different construction on these appearances of our change of condition. As her mother was a native of *Spain*, she understood the language of that countrey; so that, being no longer in doubt, after having heard the sailors discourse for some time together, that we were just going to leave the savages, and consequently to go farther than ever from the *Rouintons*; she shed a flood of tears, and seem'd inconsolable. We were sitting on the ground, and her head was lying in my lap. I knew what it was that afflicted her to such a degree. Besides, as she call'd upon our daughter a thousand times, I found that

that she was now afraid of losing her for ever, as we were going to bid adieu to the savages. 'Twas then I thought proper to acquaint her that our dear babe was dead, being persuaded that after this, she'd not only be very glad to leave the savages; but that she'd look upon the death of her child, as an evil much easier to be supported, than to have left her among the *Rouintons*. I observ'd to her, but without carrying matters too far, that she was not so much to be pitied as she imagin'd; that she ought not to be any ways troubled upon her account, since she was now with God; that the only reason why I had not acquainted her with this before, was, my being afraid it would overwhelm her with grief; but that as our condition was now so happily chang'd, I thought this the best opportunity to inform her of it; and told her, that she ought not to be so much disquieted, since the child was infinitely more happy than we.

THESE arguments made a surprizing impression on *Fanny's* mind. She look'd upon me stedfastly, when I saw that her surprize had dried up her tears on a sudden. But, my dear, says she, don't you impose upon me? Is the poor babe really dead?

I assur'd

I assur'd her that she was by the strongest protestations; but I conceal'd the circumstances of its untimely end, and invented such, both with regard to our dear innocent and the unhappy Mrs. *Riding*, as I thought most proper to heal her sorrows. She heard me with the utmost attention; but after I had done speaking, I observ'd that the tears began to trickle down her cheeks. She wrung her hands and cry'd, gracious providence! take my dear, dear baby, to thy bosom: Be thou to her instead of a mother, and make her happiness perfect. Live, dearest babe, live in the bosom of thy creator; thou wilt be more happy there than thy ill-fated mother. After this turning about to me, with a countenance which shew'd she was a little consol'd; her death, says she, is not so grievous to me as I thought it wou'd have been. I shall not be so much afflicted, because she is gone to heaven before me. I now am no longer troubled about my daughter; for we shall assuredly meet in heaven—: I confirm'd her as much as I cou'd in these sentiments, tho' I cou'd easily perceive, that this sudden consolation, proceeded less from the happy state to which she thought our daughter was gone; than



from the wretched condition, out of which she heard she was deliver'd. The idea of our dear babe, which cou'd not but occur to her mind whenever she thought of the cruel *Rouintons*, and their horrid barbarities, was a perpetual torment from which I had just deliver'd her; and by making her direct her thoughts to heaven, where her imagination was sooth'd with the most happy, the most delightful images; I had rais'd her mind to a delicious situation, in comparison of that it was in a moment before. I had nothing so consolatory to offer her with regard to her father; but I soon brought her to a persuasion, that, how severely soever the *Spaniards* might use us, they yet would let us enjoy a little more liberty than the savages had done; and consequently that it would be easier for us to take such measures, as might conduce to the viscount's welfare.

WHILST we were thus discoursing, the *Spanish* merchants were bargaining with the savages about the price of the slaves, which was done wholly by signs. As the things they traded for were upon the spot, it was not a difficult matter for 'em to understand one another. All the slaves were present in order to be view'd; and the riches of the *Spaniards* which consisted  
in

in a great number of runlets of brandy, in looking glasses, whistles, and little knives; were laid upon the grass, in order to allure the savages. After they had agreed upon the price, and that the merchandise was deliver'd, the savages went away, shouting at the same time for joy. The *Spaniards* then bid us walk towards the shore, in order to put on board their great boats. Altho' myself, and my whole family were cloath'd with skins, they yet did not take us at first for *Europeans*. Had they known this, they possibly would not have purchas'd us, from the reflection that we should not yield them any profit. This thought, which had occur'd to me, when we first came in sight of the *Spaniards*, made me strictly enjoin my people not to speak a word, till such time as we were sold. There are savages of various colours and stature in *America*; and besides, the fatigue and perplexity we had suffer'd under, had so chang'd the colour of our skins, that it differ'd very little from that of our companions, except that it was a little whiter.

'Twas therefore just as we were stepping into the boats, that I address the *Spanish* merchants in the most civil terms. I spoke their language so well as to make

myself be understood. My wife, whom I took by the hand, her two women, *Rem* and my two *Englishmen*, forming a little circle round me, drew the whole attention of our masters upon us: but, their surprize was prodigiously encreas'd, when they had heard me speak to them in *Spanish*; which made them gaze upon us for some time, without once opening their lips. My wife, fearing they did not understand my meaning, because I was far from speaking *Spanish* with propriety; told 'em, in very few words, that we were *Englishmen*; and thought ourselves infinitely oblig'd to them for the service they had done us. At last, they open'd their mouths, when they began to ask us, what chance had brought us into so unhappy a condition? I answer'd them, that we would give 'em all the satisfaction they might desire on that head, as soon as they should have the generosity to indulge us some place, where we might take a little rest.

ALTHO' they did not seem to be in any manner satisfied with the purchase they had made, of us I mean; they yet cou'd not help treating us with some little civility; and a little after, they separated us from the rest of the slaves. The first

first circumstance I entreated them to inform us, was, in what part of *America* we then were. They told us, that we were on an arm of the river of the *Holy Ghost*, which discharges its self into the gulph of *Mexico*; and that they inhabited the town of *St. Joseph*, which is situated at a little distance from the coast above mention'd; that it was their custom to advance up in the countrey several times in a year, in order to trade with the savages for different commodities. That they us'd to trade for slaves with some, for furs with others, and that this traffick was very advantageous to them. I contented myself with what I now heard, as suiting well enough our designs. As these traders did not appear to be wealthy or polite, I depended as little on their civility as their assistance; and therefore resolv'd not to reveal myself to 'em, unless some occasion might make it proper. However, 'twas not long before they perceiv'd, that we were not born to slavery, which rais'd their curiosity to a very great degree; but then I did not think proper to gratify it.

WE arriv'd at *St. Joseph's* after twelve days journey, but did not find it was inhabited by persons of any figure. They

cou'd not refuse us our liberty ; but then they did not accompany it with any offers of service, or any mark of generosity, which cou'd engage our esteem for those who granted it us. We could scarce prevail with them to give us what was absolutely necessary to keep life and soul together. We nevertheless were forc'd to continue six weeks among 'em, in expectation of some opportunity of removing from among them. This time must necessarily hang very heavy upon our hands, considering how greatly impatient we were to know what was become of the viscount. After a thousand reflections, on every thing that might serve as a foundation to my conjectures ; I resolv'd to adhere to a resolution which appear'd to me the most rational. I was destitute of every kind of succour ; and yet I stood in need of more than one, in order to render myself capable of serving his lordship. I was resolv'd to go for the island of *Cuba*, it not being at a vast great distance from *St. Joseph*, and beg the governor of it to indulge me some assistance ; he being now my grand-father by my marriage with lord *Axminster's* daughter. Altho' he had refus'd to grant any to the viscount, in order to enable him



him to annoy the *Englſh*; I was perſuaded he would afford me whatever ſuccour I might want, ſince the occaſion was ſo different. I intended alſo to leave my wife with him, when I determin'd to ramble up and down the continent in ſearch of his lordſhip. But I cou'd not execute this reſolution, which my wife highly approved, for want of proviſion and ſome kinds of vehicles or other; till a certain ſeaſon in which the little veſſels belonging to St. *Joſeph*, ſail for *Carlos*, in order to traffick for ſlaves. However, as the laſt mention'd city, ſtood not far from the point of the peninſula of *Tegſta*; I did not doubt but I ſhould meet every day with an opportunity of embarking for the *Havana*.

WE therefore waited for this time, with an impatience which increas'd every day. My wife's tender heart, which had been eas'd of part of its pains, when her affliction for our daughter was ſuſpended; was not yet more eaſy upon that account. The dread ſhe was under upon her father's account, wou'd not ſuffer her to think of any thing elſe. I, on the other ſide, was continually revolving my own anxiety, and endeavouring to conſole her. Thus we ſpent our days and

M 4      nights,

nights, which seem'd to us of a prodigious length. One day, some of the *Spaniards* who had seem'd less hard-hearted than the rest, came to acquaint us that a vessel belonging to *Pensacola* was come into the harbour; and that as her captain had signified he was going for the *Havana*, he in all probability wou'd not refuse to take us on board, in case we continued in the same resolution. Hearing this I went and found him out; notwithstanding the despicableness of my dress, he yet receiv'd me with great civility, upon hearing that I was a foreigner. He spoke *English*. I told him, that being call'd to the *Havana* by affairs of great consequence, and having waited a long time for a passage, I therefore besought him to take myself and six more persons on board with him. Hearing this, he told me, but in the most civil terms, that it would be impossible for him to take so many persons on board. I am, says he, naturally inclin'd to serve the unfortunate to the utmost of my power, and especially foreigners; and indeed I undertook the voyage merely upon that account. But altho' I intend to coast along, as I have hitherto done from *Pensacola*; and that you, possibly, might go along

along with me without the least danger, so far as the point of *Tegesta*; I would not dare to cross the streights of *Babama* with you. Upon this I left him, without giving him any farther trouble. I might, however, have accepted of his offer which he seem'd to make me, of carrying us part of the way; but as the vessels belonging to St. *Joseph*, were to set sail in a few days for *Carlos*, I was resolv'd not to put him to the least inconvenience.

BEING return'd to the little hut, which had been given us to live in, I told my wife what I have just now related; and added, that as the *Spaniard's* countenance prejudic'd me very much in his favour; I was very sorry he had not an opportunity of taking us on board his vessel. As we were pursuing our discourse; I saw him at some distance from our hut, to which some people were directing him. He came up to the door in a moment; and walk'd in with a very affable air. After having view'd for a little time our persons and our habitation; he recollected that I was the same person he had spoke to a quarter of an hour before. You are surpriz'd, says he, to see me here; but I will own to you, that being

M 5      heartily

heartily sorry I cou'd not take you on board, I therefore have enquir'd farther about your affairs; and what I have heard of your miserable condition, makes me wish that it lay in my power to do you service. I am going to the *Havana*. Have you any friend there? Can I carry any message from you to them, or bring you any from thence? Or can I be of any manner of service to you? He made me this compliment, and put these several questions to me with such an air of goodness and generosity; that not being able to express myself in *Spanish*, in such a manner as might shew the deep sense I entertain'd of his humanity; I desir'd my wife to do it for me. This she did with the utmost grace; and as she spoke the *Spanish* tongue in perfection, he cou'd hardly believe she was an *English* woman. This doubt making him consider her more narrowly; he soon perceiv'd, notwithstanding her tatter'd dress, and the change which grief and fatigue had wrought in her face, that she was not born among the dregs of the people. He was a young gentleman of a very good family, who being naturally kind and generous; and having fill'd his imagination with extraordinary adventures, as most of the *Spaniards*

niards do, by poring so much upon romances; was inspir'd with the most heroick notions, and breath'd the most noble virtues. Overjoy'd, therefore, with what he thought he had discover'd, he told my wife that his eyes could not be mistaken; and that tho' fortune should depress her ever so much, it yet wou'd be impossible but she must discover what she once was. He added to this several offers of service. My wife answer'd, that the only favour she desir'd, was to be convey'd as soon as possible to *Cuba*.

THE young *Spanish* gentleman having assur'd us, that he was still more uneasy, upon account of the impossibility it wou'd be for him to give us that testimony of his good will; took an opportunity from this, to acquaint us with the occasion of his voyage. I am, says he, son to the *Corregidor* of *Pensacola*. Some of our inhabitants who trade with the savages for slaves, brought us a great number about a fortnight since; and among the rest an *European*, whose name and countrey I am yet a stranger to. He speaks several languages to perfection. I went to see him arrive, with the several companions of his misery, when I was struck with his air; and curiosity prompting me to go up to



him, I soon discover'd that he had merited a better fate. I then offer'd to take him to my father's house, and to entertain him in it, which he accepted. He had not been there above two days, before this sudden transition from misery to abundance, threw him into a dangerous distemper. He is still afflicted with it, but as I did not visit him the less upon that account, I found him so polite, so judicious, and inform'd with such noble sentiments; that I take him to be one of the greatest men in the world. Tho' I have entreated him over and over to inform me of the several circumstances of his life, I have not yet been able to get a word out of him. I have only heard him repeat over and over, that all he wish'd, was, an opportunity of sailing for the island of *Cuba*. I suppos'd that he wanted to go thither himself, and thereupon I offer'd to convey him: But he said, he wanted only to send a letter to the governor, who is his friend. Now, continued the *Spanish* gentleman, I have so much love for him, that I have undertaken that commission myself. From some words he let drop in conversation, I believe fate has separated him from some persons who are very dear to him; and  
that.

that he is afraid of quitting the continent, for fear of leaving them behind.

'Twas impossible for us not to be seiz'd with the most extraordinary emotions, upon hearing the latter part of this discourse, and particularly my wife. Her tears and sighs broke from her, tho' she did her utmost to suppress them. Alas! says she, in a faint voice; 'tis my father! 'Tis certainly himself, and I cannot doubt of it. — She was for going that instant to *Pensacola*; but I stopt her, when she sat down, holding me by the arm, and continuing still to cry aloud, the tears streaming afresh from her eyes; 'tis my father! Can it, my dear Mr. *Cleveland*, be any other but him? Let us haste, let us fly to him, and not lose a moment. I was as much persuaded as she cou'd be, that it must necessarily be the viscount, and the several circumstances conspir'd to confirm me in the belief of it. However, I had some farther discourse with the *Spaniard*; when having acquainted him who the person was that we were seeking for, and given a description of him; he then did not doubt but that the unhappy gentleman he entertain'd in his house, was the viscount himself.

THIS

THIS fill'd him with the highest admiration and joy, when he lifted up his hands to heaven, and cried that he thought himself the happiest man in the world, in thus having an opportunity to assist distressed virtue; and thereupon he desir'd us to dispose of his estate, and his life. Never, surely, did the *Spanish* generosity display itself in a more graceful or eloquent manner. I thank'd him in the warmest terms, and said; This gentleman can certainly be no other than my father-in-law. The present you'll hereby make us, will be dearer than life itself. Your generous heart will now have the best opportunity it cou'd ever desire, of gratifying its impulses. But, I must beg you to carry us to *Pensacola*, the very first opportunity you have for that purpose. Be assur'd that the commission you was pleas'd to undertake for the gentleman at your house, is now altogether useless; and that the most grateful service you can ever do him, will be, to bring us together as soon as possible. The generous *Spaniard* wou'd fain have cloath'd us first, but we begg'd him to defer that till we came to *Pensacola*, where we should be proud of accepting any good offices he should please to indulge us; and added,  
that

that we did not doubt but it wou'd be in our power, to discover our gratitude in an essential manner.

*Pensacola* is a pretty handsome *Spanish* settlement, situated to the west of *St. Joseph* on the coast of the same sea. Tho' I did not exactly know the distance of those two places, I yet believe it is not considerable, because we were but two days in our passage. Upon our arrival in the port, our *Spaniard*, meeting with some persons of his acquaintance, ask'd them whether no new thing had happen'd in his absence? Nothing, said they, except that the foreigner you took into your father's house, is at the point of death. This was most fatal news to my wife and I, and immediately chang'd our joy into a deadly fear. We made haste, but trembled at the same time, to reach the *Corregidor's* house. His son first went alone into the viscount's room; a precaution that was necessary, in order to prepare him by degrees for our arrival. We waited at the door; and confounded by the different impulses of joy, fear and sorrow, which warr'd in our bosoms; we clasp'd each other fast, the tears gushing, tho' unheeded by us, down our cheeks. The viscount was told, after a few words  
had

had been exchang'd, that we were, near him. Heavens! how tender are the sensations of nature! Notwithstanding his excessive weakness, he yet struggled to run out of bed. We heard him getting up, and repeat the name of *Fanny*, but in the faintest voice, which his sighs and tears had almost supprest. We ran in, the instant as the *Spaniard* kept him down in his bed, when the viscount seeing us come in, he did not offer to move, but sitting up in the bed, he stretch'd out his arms to us in the utmost extacy of joy. Alas! daughter! Alas! Mr. *Cleveland*! His spirits were in such prodigious hurry, that it depriv'd him of the faculty of speech.

WE then fell upon our knees before him. I kiss'd one of his hands, and my wife squeez'd the other, put it to her lips, and bath'd it with her tears. We express'd our selves in a certain manner; but we did not so much break into articulate sounds, as a tender and plaintive murmur, which shew'd how strongly we were affected. We continu'd thus for some time, the viscount reclining his head upon us, being equally incapable of uttering a single word. At last, I first broke this tender and passionate silence. Are we then met  
again,



again, says I; we are so happy as to be once more bless'd with the sight of you! Your absence, and the uncertainty of your fate, have afflicted us mortally. But I now forget all the evils I have suffer'd; I excuse fortune for all her cruel treatment. Does fate then give you to our longing wishes! What more dear can we desire? But we meet with you on the bed of sickness, and at the point of death! Alas, will not heaven complete the miracle it has wrought in our favour? Has it brought us happily to you, but only to snatch the blessing away, the instant it was indulg'd us! At least let it permit us to breathe our last with you; let it separate us no more, in case it has brought us together out of mere compassion. I added a thousand other particulars, whilst my wife and our dear father were recovering from their transports. My lord then open'd his lips; and though he was in a very dangerous condition, his fond affection gave him spirits sufficient, to express his joy in the most melting terms. But the words with which he ended, were far from giving us the least satisfaction. I find, says he, that I have but a very little time to live. Death appear'd to me in the most frightful shapes, a quarter of an hour ago;

ago ; but now it is far from being terrible, since I see you both here. You may very easily get to *Cuba*, where you'll meet with your grandfather, who, no doubt, will be overjoy'd to see you. Let my body be carried thither, in case you have an opportunity to do it ; and I farther desire you to take care of my burial. Gracious heavens ! says he, with a fresh transport, thou hast then restor'd my dear children, my *Fanny*, my *Cleveland*, to my longing wishes ! They shall close my eyes, they shall receive my latest breath, I shall die in their arms ! He then embrac'd us again with fresh transports of joy and tenderness.

I COULD answer only by my tears, to a discourse, every word of which pierced me to the soul. My wife continu'd also to shed tears in abundance ; and was unable to express her melting grief, any other-wise than by a few words, which sighs interrupted every moment. The young *Spaniard* who seem'd touch'd to the very soul at so moving a spectacle ; and who knew better than we did, how ill his lordship was ; desir'd us to withdraw a moment, in order that he might recover his spirits a little. This I intended to do ; I even told him, that he himself cou'd not wish

wish so much to live, as we were desirous that he shou'd; and that we were going to leave him a moment, for fear lest the strong tumults he then felt, shou'd heighten his indisposition; however, he wou'd not permit us to go away. Don't, says he, bereave me of the only consolation I can possibly taste in this life. Don't you plainly perceive that your presence has reviv'd me? I was dying but a moment before; and 'tis you who prevent my soul taking its flight from this weak, this feeble body; and were I not sure that it is impossible for me to recover, I wou'd sooner expect that from your presence, than from the power of medicines. — We therefore were oblig'd to stay with him. He then told us, so far as his weakness wou'd give him leave, the misfortunes which had befallen him since our sad separation. The circumstances of it differ'd but very little from what the *Abaquis*, who had been taken prisoner, told us. *Iglou*, and the *Englishmen* who accompanied him, had lost their lives in defending his. He had suffer'd under a long captivity, and been oblig'd to follow the savages in all their inroads; in which he had been perpetually expos'd to such excessive fatigue and misery, that these had quite ruin'd his.

his constitution, which had before been very much weaken'd by the misfortunes with which he had been oppress'd for so many years. 'Twas but a fortnight ago that the savages had brought him to the river whither we had been carried; and that he had been sold, with a great number of other slaves, to the *Spaniards* of *Pensacola*.

AFTER having thus related all that had happen'd to him, he desir'd us to relate also what had befallen us. This I did in a few words, and omitted purposely all such gloomy circumstances as might increase his illness. He did not know that heaven had given us a dear daughter. My wife look'd upon me with a tender and melancholy air, when I came to that part of our story. I read in her eyes, that she wish'd to inform him of this affecting incident, which must necessarily have pleased him, had it not been attended with such melancholy circumstances. I also took care never to mention Mrs. *Riding's* name, but when I was absolutely forc'd to it.

BUT although the agitations with which he was seiz'd, had, perhaps, prevented him till now from thinking of her; it yet was not long before he ask'd us what was become of her; where she was, and why  
we

we had not brought her along with us? My heart wou'd not now suffer me to put on a disguise; upon which I told him plainly, that heaven had been pleas'd to take her to itself. We then all paid a tribute of tears to her memory: however, the viscount wou'd not suffer his to flow. Wherefore, says he, shou'd I bewail her death, since in less than two days I shall meet her in the region of souls? Alas, says he, your condition will be far more unhappy than ours. I possibly may leave you the wrath of heaven for an inheritance, which has continually pursued me; and which, no doubt, will henceforwards follow you, whithersoever you may fly. God! how can I hope to be easy after death, in case I must be forc'd to die with this sad reflection? But resum'd he, interrupting himself, wherefore shou'd I afflict my self in this voluntary manner? Ought I not, on the contrary, to give a favourable interpretation to our unexpected meeting; and the exquisite pleasure I taste, in thus embracing you before I die? 'Tis impossible for heaven ever to deceive. It now begins to relent; and I will look upon this as a favourable omen, with regard to my dear children and myself.

I DID



I DID whatever I cou'd, during the little time he had to live, to confirm him in this consolatory idea ; and I observ'd that it sooth'd his latter moments to a surprising degree. He was undoubtedly not mistaken, in hoping that heaven wou'd bestow the greatest blessings upon himself. His virtue, which had so long been put to the trial, was now going to be rewarded ; and this happy presage, which now soothed his agonies, was one recompence. However, his unfortunate children were not included in the sentence, which put a period to his woes, and call'd him to immortal blifs.

HE died the third day after our arrival. He had employ'd the day before, not only in giving us advice, in what manner we should return back to *Europe*, and what we should do when we were arriv'd in it ; but likewise in pointing out to us, how we shou'd act, both to raise our fortunes ; to reingratiate our selves in his majesty's favour ; and to recover the estate which he had made over to the lord *Terwill*, and which he was persuaded that generous friend wou'd not fail to give up to us. Towards night he grew much worse ; nevertheless, as he still had all his senses about him ; he, by intervals, wou'd recover

ver spirits enough, to breathe a few tender and melting expressions. He kiss'd his daughter's hands, he squeez'd mine ; he besought us every moment to suppress our tears, and to love one another eternally : At last he told us, that he was sensible he was just going to his long home ; and indeed he expir'd a moment after, as he had desir'd, within his daughters arms and mine.

So violent were the pangs with which I was tortur'd at this sight, that I cou'd have wish'd to fly from the presence of men, and indulge no other sensations but those of sorrow. I wou'd have been glad to be alone, in the most desert part of all *America* ; to be there employ'd in silently bewailing my misfortunes ; to contemplate my self in this melancholy condition ; to ask heaven why it thus pour'd out all its wrath upon me ; to sue for its justice or clemency with sighs and groans ; in case it wou'd indue me with patience sufficient, not to exasperate it still more by my murmurs and complaints. I put my self for some moments in this deplorable condition, by mere strength of imagination ; and found some consolation, even in these hateful images. But now my wife's tears and sighs, having recall'd me from this  
kind

kind of delirium ; I experienc'd by seeing her, that it is possible for the soul to be mov'd, at one and the same time, by a variety of Passions, and all of 'em equally violent. She embrac'd her father's pale corps ; and her grief was so affecting, that the *Corregidor* his son, and all the persons present, cou'd not forbear bursting into tears before her. It was impossible for me to see her in such distraction, without feeling the most exquisite pangs. Her innate goodness, which so strongly prov'd how dear I was to her ; that air of sweetness which she always wore, even in this affliction, which border'd so much upon despair ; the flood of lovely tears, which ran so gracefully down her cheeks ; and more than all, my love which was as strong as ever ; hurried away my spirits to such a degree, that I abandon'd my self entirely to the impulses of my heart. I then took her on a sudden into my arms, when clasping her to my bosom, I fate down. Come, says I in a tone of voice breathing the strongest passion ; come, my amiable *Fanny* ; mix your tears with mine, and let not a single one drop, but what falls into my bosom ; pour out all your wailings in my bosom. I alone will receive them all, and die a thousand deaths

to

to spare you one. — Notwithstanding she was prey'd upon by the most violent grief, she nevertheless was sensible to this tender transport. I have now, says she in a most languishing voice, none but you left; my father, my mother, my child! all I ought to love are dead. Alas! did not you survive, life wou'd be quite insupportable, and I wou'd not preserve it an instant! The *Corregidor* and his son, took this opportunity to get the viscount's corpse carried into another room; and after we miss'd it, we begg'd it might be brought back, but to no purpose.

'Tis not without reason, that I thus intermix with a relation of one of the most sad calamities of my life, that of an impulse of love, and some tender expressions which both my wife and my self breath'd. This observation will not be thought indifferent, by such of my readers as have penetration sufficient to judge of the nature of a passion, which two years of marriage, and an uninterrupted series of misfortunes had been so incapable of lessening; that it still had power enough to make itself be heard in so imperious a manner, even amid the transports of the most violent sorrow that ever tortur'd a human

breast. Will it then be surprizing, to see it produce after this the dreadful effects which the reader may expect to meet with, and which I have oblig'd my self to relate? I was dearer to my wife than she cou'd be to her self; and was still dearer to her, now she had lost her fond, her indulgent father. Alas! I who thus represent the love she had for me, what words shall I find to paint my own? Will it be enough to say that I worshipp'd her as my idol? I ador'd her, and she lov'd me with a reciprocal affection. By what charm was it possible for distrust and black suspicions, to succeed so sweet a certainty? This is the only circumstance in this particular that is astonishing; for 'tis well known, that when once a person no longer confides in another, the strongest love is apt to turn to fury, and to produce the same effects as hatred.

I know not what gloomy pleasure I find, in proportion as I proceed in the story of my life, to interrupt myself in the manner I do; and to anticipate my readers with regard to what I am to relate hereafter. Does not every incident of my life abound with circumstances of a most singular nature; and is not each of 'em affecting enough, to engage the reader's



der's attention? No; but I consult my own grief, much more than I do the laws of history, and the rules which are prescrib'd to biographers. How numerous soever and various my misfortunes may be, they now act altogether upon my heart; the sensation which now remains to me of them, is not the effect of variety; 'tis now, if I may so express myself, but an uniform mass of sorrow, which oppresses me continually with its weight. I therefore should be glad, were it in the power of my pen to unite in one stroke of it, the several calamities of my life; in the same manner as their effect is united in my soul. Then the reader would be much better able to form a judgment of the state of it. Regularity and order are a constraint to me; and as I am not able to represent all my misfortunes at one view, the greatest present themselves with the strongest force to my memory; and these I cou'd wish at least, that I were allow'd to lay before the reader before the rest.

HOWEVER, I will still continue to relate the several incidents as they happened. After some days spent in the highest excess of grief, which yet I disguis'd as much as possibly I cou'd, in order to encourage my wife by my example; I re-

solv'd to leave *Penfacola*, and to get his lordship's corpse embalm'd, in order to take it along with us. The *Corregidor* and his son continu'd still as humane and generous as ever. I thought it wou'd not be improper, to inform them of the viscount's birth and quality, in order to engage 'em to extend their civilities still more to us, during the last days of his sickness.

THO' they were naturally generous, yet their letting them into these circumstances, inclin'd them still more in our favour. Both the father and son did not spare either care or expences. We consented to accept of some clothes they gave both to us and our servants, who were five in number; and when the day which we had fix'd upon for our arrival was come; we not only found that a little vessel had been fitted for us, but were greatly surpriz'd to find that our benefactors were dispos'd to accompany us. I did not oppose their resolution, being, on the contrary, very glad to see them in the *Havana*; where I was perswaded Don *Pedro* wou'd enable us to discover our gratitude, in such a manner as was agreeable to our wishes. The only thing that gave me uneasiness at our setting out, was, the smallness of the vessel, which cou'd scarce hold

hold us all, being nine in number, and a few sailors: but this was the largest that cou'd be met with in the road of *Pensacola*. I wou'd not for the world have my wife expos'd to the least danger; and therefore I took a resolution to coast it along to *Carlos*, and to dispatch one of my *Englishmen* from thence, to inform the governour of *Cuba* where we were; who, I knew, wou'd not fail to send a good tight ship for us. We arriv'd happily at *Carlos*, when I dispatch'd *Dring* who was one of my *Englishmen*, who return'd in less than a week with a vessel sent by the governour. This we went immediately aboard of, and having a strong gale of wind, we arriv'd in twenty four hours at the *Havana*.

*Don Pedro* receiv'd us with the utmost tendernefs, as he had lost his daughter, and saw her image reviv'd in my wife. He embrac'd us a thousand times, and declar'd that we must comfort him in his old age. The viscount's corpse, which we brought in a coffin, was a melancholy present. He cou'd not forbear shedding tears, when he recollected how strongly he had endeavour'd, to prevent his leaving *Cuba*. Had he follow'd my advice, says he, he wou'd have still been alive;

he might have commanded every thing here as much as myself; and I wou'd have done my utmost to make life agreeable to him. But his grief was vastly increas'd, when he heard the lamentable scenes we had pass'd through during two years; and how many misfortunes his lordship had met with, for some time before he died. The good old gentleman cou'd hardly recover from his astonishment. Sometimes he wou'd reproach himself with our calamities, as though he had occasion'd them; and a little after he wou'd call heaven to witness, that he, so far from endeavouring to increase, had done whatever lay in his power to prevent them. Did not I, said he every moment, employ all the arguments I cou'd think of to detain him? Did not I even foretel part of the fatal accidents which afterwards befel him? Was it in my power to assist him with forces, after a peace was concluded between *Spain* and *England*? Did I not advise him every thing for his good? But why did not he, at least, leave his daughter with me? As I was his father-in-law, ought he not to have confided in me, sooner than in any other person in the world? Why did he not, at least, return to *Cuba*, after he had fail'd in his enterprize

prize upon *Virginia*. — Although these wailings were now ineffectual, they yet showed; that we might expect the greatest indulgence from our grandfather. Of this he gave us, a few days after, the strongest testimonies, by the splendid manner in which he buried his lordship. This sadly-solemn ceremony awak'd all our sorrows. The only motive of consolation I had now left, was, that as I now enjoy'd my freedom and ease in the *Havana*; I was now enabled to return to the study of wisdom, which the many sufferings I had undergone for some time, wou'd not suffer me to pursue, but in meditation only. I now possess, says I, my dear wife and my books. These are two powerful remedies which may contribute to sooth my anxiety, and heal my tortur'd heart.

*Don Pedro*, from the very moment of our arrival, treated us as though we had been his children, and continued to do so, all the time we staid with him. He first signaliz'd his generosity, by rewarding the *Corregidor* of *Pensacola* for the great service he had done us. He bestow'd very considerable presents on the father, and bestow'd one of the most honourable employments in the island on the son. As



I had been married to my wife, only by the reciprocal promise we made, and the consent which her father was pleas'd to indulge us; Don *Pedro* desir'd it might be ratified by the priestly sanction. This threw us into some perplexity. We were not of the *Romish* persuasion; and there was no probability of our meeting with a protestant clergyman among the *Spaniards*; so that Don *Pedro's* desires, as well as our own, wou'd not have been gratified for a long time, had we not at last consented to receive the nuptial blessing from a priest of the church of *Rome*. But although, properly speaking, I did not immediately profess any religion; I yet was of opinion, that it was our duty to venerate the clergy of all those which acknowledge and serve one only God, merely upon account of the Deity they represent. And thereupon I exhorted my wife not to scruple to repeat her solemn promises in presence of Don *Pedro's* chaplain. The governour and all the inhabitants of the *Havana*, wou'd have been overjoy'd, had we embrac'd their communion; but their worship is so whimsical and superstitious, especially among the *Spaniards*; that it is impossible for a man of sense, who is not blinded by the prejudices of education, to entertain

entertain a favourable idea of the church of *Rome*. I therefore begg'd of the governour not to insist upon my turning catholick; promising, at the same time, to let my wife chuse for herself.

My dear *Fanny*, notwithstanding the fatigues of the voyage, and the various calamities she had suffer'd, was pretty far advanc'd with child. I had trembled a thousand times, when we were surrounded with dangers, for the dear infant she then went with. But the tranquillity we enjoy'd at the *Havana*, having soon restor'd her to health; she was happily deliver'd of two children a very few months after our arrival. She was first brought to bed of a son; but as the other remain'd behind, I was afraid it would be attended with some unhappy consequences; six weeks after, she was as happily deliver'd of another son. I offer'd up my sincere thanks to heaven for this present, but yet did not dare abandon myself to joy, when I reflected on the sad fate our dear daughter had met with. Indulgent heaven! did I cry in the bitterness of that thought, thou givest me more than thou bereavest me of; but what satisfaction soever I may receive from the birth of my two sons, will it ever outweigh the excessive sorrow which

my dear daughter's unhappy death fill'd me with? — As for Don *Pedro* and my wife, they were greatly comforted to see our family increas'd in this manner.

I SPENT some time in the *Havana* in the most easy manner, and very seldom went abroad. Those hours I did not pass with my wife or Don *Pedro*, were devoted to study. I generally perus'd *Spanish* authors; and tho' I seldom approv'd of their thoughts, or their diction, I nevertheless frequently met with excellent touches in their works, on which I would build the most profound and useful speculations; and all these I directed to the improvement of my conduct, and the strengthening of my mind. My old principles, that precious inheritance which my mother had left me, were not so eras'd from my memory, but I cou'd easily discover the traces of them. Although my imagination had been less employ'd on these for some time, (it having been almost perpetually fill'd with a numberless multitude of other objects, which had divided my attention) yet the footsteps of them still existed in it; and the reader may have observ'd, that they always had a strong influence on my behaviour. These principles I recollected, in the same order that

that they had been inculcated. I imagin'd my self to be acting over again the same scenes I had pass'd thro', from the time I had left *Rumney-Marsh*, and my mother's grave. I compar'd all my actions, my virtues and weaknesses, my pleasures and pains, my happy and unhappy adventures; the use I had made of them, with those moral precepts, the wisdom of which I once was so sensible of. I examin'd on what occasions, and what were the motives which had made me depart from them; and whether it were their fault or mine? Whether it were weakness of mind, or a hurry of the passions on my side; or on theirs, a want of truth to conduct me, or of strength to support me? I discover'd in a clearer manner than I had ever done, the source of all my impulses, and the most secret springs of all my passions. In fine, I was not satisfy'd with having carry'd, as it were, a torch, to view the most secret recesses of my heart; every thing I perceiv'd in it of an evil tendency, I endeavour'd to banish from it; or to establish it in a still stronger manner, in case I found it was relative to virtue. Endeavouring even to extend my cares to futurity, I form'd to my self a kind of arsenal of moral and philosophical weapons,

fit for all occasions, and adapted to a thousand circumstances which it was impossible for me to foretel.

I MUST be oblig'd to acknowledge, to the glory of philosophy and reason, that these two guides were more powerful than all my evils. After so many sorrows as I had been afflicted with, they were able to restore a certain tranquillity to my soul; and to raise it to a height, whence I cou'd perceive happiness, as a state to which I was still allow'd to aspire. Indeed, a melancholy still sat brooding over my spirits, which I cou'd not flatter myself that either time or all my efforts wou'd ever be able to dispel; but I now accustom'd myself to consider it, not so much as an indisposition of the soul, as a change which age brings about; and which most people are troubled with, after a certain number of years are past. Add to this, that the fatigue alone I had gone through in my troubles, and the continual misfortunes I had met with in them, might have wrought this change in me. Though it was not possible for me to forget my misfortunes, I nevertheless had acquir'd so much strength, as to bear 'em, so far with patience and resignation, as to afflict myself without trouble; and to  
complain,



complain, if I also may be allow'd the expression, without grief or murmuring. Such was the frame and situation of my mind at the *Havana*.

DURING my residence there, I had been inform'd of the several revolutions which had happen'd in *England*, since the time I had left *France*. I had heard that the new fabrick of the commonwealth was destroy'd; that the Protector's family was ruin'd; that the royal house was return'd, with the several circumstances of King *Charles's* happy restoration, and how propitiously it had been brought about. This happy news made us wish to be in *England*, had it been possible for us to have left the island of *Cuba* in a decent manner; but we were bound to Don *Pedro* by numberless obligations, who still began to shower down his favours upon us. My wife was desirous of living with him, 'till heaven shou'd please to take him out of the world; in order that he might enjoy the consolation, of having some person who was dear to him to close his eyes. I acquiesc'd readily with her wishes. With regard to him, he did not doubt but we intended to continue always in his house. He indeed was the nearest relation my wife had left; and he look'd upon her,  
and

and our children, as though they had been his own. Nevertheless, notwithstanding the great love we had for this venerable gentleman, yet as we were born in different countries, we cou'd not but look upon our selves as strangers in his house ; so that we were far from thinking, though the contrary afterwards happen'd, that he wou'd have made us his sole heirs.

I HAPPEN'D, before the year was out, to share in an adventure of so extraordinary a nature, that it deserves to be taken notice of in this place, tho' I thereby interrupt the thread of my narration ; and I don't doubt but it will be agreeable to my readers.

THE captain of a *Spanish* vessel which was arriv'd from *Porto Rico*, being come to pay his compliments to *Don Pedro* ; told him, before me, that he had met with a dreadful storm between *Jamaica* and the coast of *Nicaragua* ; and had been drove, by the winds, on the shore of a small desert island call'd *Serrana*. He told us that he had spent two days on it, waiting till the tempest might cease ; during which, some of his sailors went ashore, and had rambled up and down the island, which is not above three leagues in circumference. Altho' it seem'd to be uninha-

uninhabited, he nevertheless had perceiv'd the footsteps of a man in several places; and therefore not doubting but they should meet with one, they had search'd the most remote places in it for that purpose. At last, continued the captain, they saw, coming out of a hole at the bottom of a deep valley, a man of a tall stature, cloath'd in a pretty rich dress, but dirty and torn; who the moment he spy'd them, struck into a little wood. They soon found him, and having laid hold of him, he was brought to me. I ask'd him in *Spanish* who he was? He answer'd in his own tongue, that he was an *Englishman*; and that he was very much surpriz'd, as he had not injur'd any of my crew, why they stop'd him in a forcible manner. I desir'd him to excuse their rudeness, and offer'd to serve him to the utmost of my power. He seem'd to be lost in thought a moment, when recovering himself, he told me that he stood in need of two things; and that he wou'd be vastly oblig'd to me, in case I cou'd procure 'em him. The first, was, to furnish him with the several materials which were necessary for writing, that is, paper, pens and ink; the second, was to give him a few books, in case I had any  
on

on board my vessel, in order to divert him in his solitude. I immediately promis'd to oblige him in these two trifling favours; but being desirous of knowing who he was, and part of his story; I entreated him to tell me what it was that could engage him to dwell in this solitude, and why he wou'd not take the opportunity of embarking along with us? In case I could be persuaded, says he, interrupting me suddenly, that there was one honest man in the world, I would leave this island immediately. But after the baseness and treachery I have met with, I would gladly hide myself in the bowels of the earth, in order to be remov'd from those who dwell on the surface of it. He absolutely refus'd to explain himself farther; when being urgent with me to give him what I had promis'd; he left me, and begg'd I wou'd not suffer my crew to molest him any more. I pitied him, continued the *Spanish* captain, because he appear'd by his countenance and behaviour, to be a man of honour and a person of distinction. But not being able to force him away from thence against his will, I took advantage of the favourable gale which had sprung up, and immediately made for this place.

THIS

THIS relation, which had nothing in it that should affect me more than it did the rest of those who heard it, struck me nevertheless in such a manner, as shew'd I had been vastly more touch'd with it than an other person; and indeed I cou'd not put it out of my head, for several days. I was incessantly meditating on that force of reason and bravery, with which I suppos'd the breast of that man must have been inspir'd, who could thus resolve with himself to retire to so deep a solitude. To this I subjoyn'd the motive which had prompted him to it, *viz.* a hatred of treachery and injustice; and from these two, I form'd to myself a most amiable idea of this unknown. This, says I to myself, is a man I should infallibly love, in case I were so happy as to know him. He would also love me, for he would find that rectitude of soul in me, which he fancies is absolutely banish'd from among men. I have no friend left. Wherefore then should I not endeavour to make him one, whose temper and principles seem so suitable to mine? Besides, I shall do a generous and charitable office to an unhappy man, who seems not to deserve his ill-fate, if I contribute to the consolation of his sorrows; and



and to make him, perhaps, taste a thousand sweets, which he could never have flatter'd himself with the hopes of enjoying in this life. I therefore found myself strongly prompted, to go to the island of *Serrana* for this purpose. I enquir'd after its situation, and how far it was distant from us; and the several particulars I heard, engag'd me still more to visit it. This island lies to the south of *Jamaica*; so that as I had a design for some time to go for *Port-Royal*, in order to be certainly inform'd of the state of *England*; I could go by that city without going out of my way. This voyage wou'd not take up much time; and as the several nations who have settlements in this part of the *West-Indies*, were in a profound peace, I cou'd not apprehend the least danger. My wife was nevertheless very uneasy when I talk'd of going; however, I at last, by the arguments I us'd, made her approve of my enterprize. You wou'd not, says I, be against my undertaking a voyage, in case it would bring me to the possession of a treasure; and can you be against my undertaking one, which is suggested by virtue and compassion? Suffer me to go in search of the riches which I esteem. In case you love  
me

me enough to wish me happy, what need you care which way it is brought about, in case I am made so essentially? And then, as you are naturally so good-natur'd and generous, can you think after a different manner from me, what it is that forms the felicity of a tender and upright heart? When I tell you that I am in want of a friend; and that I shall undertake that voyage merely in this view; don't you perceive that such a treasure is worth looking after? My wife made but one objection to this: Am not I, says she, your wife? Am not I moreover, your tender, your faithful friend? Do you hope to meet with something in another, which you cannot find in me? To this I answer'd, that what I call'd the happiness of friendship, ought to be taken in a different sense. With regard to myself, says I, it is so far from supposing that I don't meet with every thing in you that is essential to the forming of my happiness; that 'tis on the contrary, because I am infinitely so; that I now want this other felicity which I seek in friendship. Hear me, dear *Fanny*, says I, and comprehend this riddle if you can. You, my charming creature, create my happiness; but then in order that I may be

be sensible of the happiness which I enjoy by your presence, it is necessary that I should have some person who is not you; to whom I may not only tell this, but in whom I may have confidence enough, to declare it with pleasure; and who may love me dear enough to be pleas'd at hearing it.

I EMBARK'D at the *Havana* on a good ship, which was well mann'd; and the wind was so favourable, that I got to *Jamaica* the day after. I there met with an *English* vessel, arriv'd from the port of *London*, the captain whereof happily confirm'd all that *Don Pedro* had told me, with regard to king *Charles's* restoration. This was not a new event, that monarch having been return'd above two years from his exile; but then I was unacquainted with a great number of circumstances, which I had heard with the utmost pleasure. I afterwards enquir'd, whether any one had heard at *Port-Royal*, of an *Englishman* who had banish'd himself to the island of *Serrana*, where he resided, firmly resolv'd not to converse with his fellow creatures more. No one had heard of him; but I was told several particulars concerning that island, which made me much more desirous of visiting it.

They

They assur'd me, that it borrow'd its name from one *Serrano*, a *Spanish* gentleman, who had liv'd a great number of years in it, in the same solitary manner as the *Englishman* whom I mention'd to them; that it was not only a very difficult matter to get near this island, because of the rocks which surround it; but even dreadful, especially in the night, because it seems to throw out flames, on that part of it which lies towards *Nicaragua*; that this had not prevented several people from having the curiosity to visit it; and that some things had happen'd, which show'd that the flames just now mention'd, were owing to an extraordinary cause.

THEREUPON I was told, that Sir *George Ascough*, after having seiz'd in the parliament's name, upon *Barbadoes*, which the lord *Willoughby* commanded in the king's name; had intended, on the relation which he had heard of the island of *Serrana*, to go thither, merely out of curiosity. He arriv'd at it very happily, just after it was dark, but was a little afraid at the sight of the flames with which it seem'd to be entirely surrounded. Astonishment succeeded his fears, when he observ'd, as he drew nearer the shore,  
that

that the flames seem'd to draw back from him. He then went ashore with his crew, who were as brave as himself; and being resolv'd not to put off till the next day, the searching after the cause of this phænomenon; he advanc'd forward into the island, observing that the flames seem'd still to fly, as it were, before him. At last, when he now began to be perswaded that these flames were not real, but only an illusion of fancy; they stopp'd in such a manner, that it was impossible for him to go farther. But now being prodigiously surpriz'd, he walk'd a great many times round the place whence the flames issued, which seem'd to rise out of the earth, and to have no other fuel but that. He then held out his hands towards the flames, but they scorch'd them so prodigiously, that he was oblig'd to draw them back. The night being spent without any other accident, he observ'd that the flames disappear'd with the darkness. But seeing that a black vapour continued to rise from the same place, he order'd some of his sailors to return to the ship, and to bring back such instruments as were proper for digging. Four of them undertook to throw up the ground; but scarce had they dug up a lay of hot, and  
almost



almost burning stones, which cover'd the surface; but the ground opening under their feet, they were swallow'd up alive, none of their companions daring to advance forwards, to assist them. Sir *George*, being vastly astonished at what he saw, and perhaps terrified, was for returning immediately on board; but both himself and his crew, were intoxicated, whether this were owing to the vapour, or some other cause; insomuch that they found it a very difficult matter to get back to the shore. They even felt the most dreadful pains in all their limbs, as they drew farther from the island; and were not recover'd, till after they had repos'd themselves for some days.

WITHOUT endeavouring to examine into the truth of this incident, which meditations might be accounted for from natural principles; thought only of setting out for *Serrana* as soon as possible. The wind continuing favourable, I reach'd it in a little time, but did not perceive any flames as I drew near the shore. 'Twas then, indeed, noon; and we were on the north side of it. I found that the banks of the island were very sandy and barren. We saw such a multitude of tortoises on the sand, that I had reason to believe,

those who inhabited that solitude, did not want provisions. The island is not above three leagues in circumference, so that I did not doubt but it would be an easy matter for me to go round it before the day ended; and to find in some part or other, what I chiefly came in search of. Nevertheless, after I had gone a little up into the country, I saw so many little woods, and such a variety of soils; that I imagin'd it would not be so easy a matter for me to find the *Solitary* as I at first imagin'd. I rambled up and down, with part of the sailors, a great part of the afternoon. And now the evening coming on, I resolv'd to go to the top of a hill, whence, I saw, not only the surrounding ocean, but also a great number of little vallies, which I had not seen before. I had not stood ten minutes upon it, when I spy'd, at about half a mile distance from me, a man who was walking slowly towards the bottom of a valley. I cou'd not doubt but this was the person I was in search of; and thereupon I order'd my sailors to wait there; and taking only one with me, I made as much haste as I could towards the valley, in order, if possible, to come up with the *Solitary*, before it was dark.

I GOT

I GOT to him before he had taken any notice of us, and found that he was very near the place of his abode. I stop'd, in order to give him time to enter into it. 'Twas not a hole, as the *Spanish* captain had describ'd it, but a commodious hut, tho' built wholly of turf, rais'd upon wooden poles. I then went to the entrance of it, when the *Solitary* seem'd to be in a prodigious surprize. However, without discovering the least fear, he ask'd, in *English*, what had brought me into that island, and if I had any business. As I resolv'd to be a little acquainted with him, before I reveal'd myself to him; I contented myself with making him a civil answer, to prevent his being alarm'd at my coming. He then ask'd me several questions; such as, whether I were an *Englishman*? whither I was bound for? whence I came? And having satisfied him in these several particulars, he seem'd to be highly pleas'd, when I told him I intended to go back to *Jamaica*; and thereupon desir'd I would carry him thither. This request surpriz'd me very much. I suppose, says I, that you are now weary of your solitude, and are resolv'd never to return again into this island— I came, says he, with an air of

the deepest melancholly, into this island, with a design of spending my days in it; but the just cause I have to hate mankind, cannot get the better of the affliction which preys upon me night and day. I am resolv'd to leave the island, and return to *Europe*. The world is fill'd with treacherous creatures; but since 'tis a necessary evil, I must arm myself with patience, and live as well as I can among them.

I GAZ'D upon him attentively as he was talking. He had a promising aspect; but then I discover'd something severe in his looks, that did not fill me with the satisfaction, which I had flatter'd myself his presence would give me. He was pale and wan, and his clothes were very much tatter'd. I am surpriz'd, says I, that the motives which prompted you to withdraw to this solitude, should not be strong enough to engage you to continue in it. Are these so absolutely a secret, that you cannot reveal them to me? Upon my saying this, he desir'd me to sit down by him; and after musing a few moments, he said, that he did not know any reason which ought to engage him to conceal his name from me, as I appear'd to be a gentleman and a man of honour;

honour; and that the service I was going to do him, by the opportunity I furnish'd him with of returning into *Europe*, deserv'd, at least, that he should reveal himself to me.

My name, says he, is well known in the world. I am general *Lambert*. *Oliver Cromwell*, who ow'd all his fortune to me, and for whose sake I had sacrific'd every thing, abandon'd me in so perfidious a manner; that he was not ashamed, at last, to remove me from all my employments, which I had purchas'd with my blood and services. *Fleetwood* and *Desborough*, who were never capable of undertaking any thing without my advice; and who must have fallen, the moment I ceas'd to support them; betray'd me in a still more cruel manner; and this at a time when I ventur'd my life and fortune for their sakes. *Ingoldsby* the most wicked wretch that ever liv'd; and who, nevertheless, was more oblig'd to me than to any other person, has nevertheless carried his ingratitude to such a pitch, as not only to abandon my interest, but even to attack me sword in hand; to seize, and sell me to general *Monk* for a sum of money; and after this to imprison me in a dungeon, where I was loaded with



irons. Shall I relate to you, the several treacherous actions of my friends, of my creatures, and servants? I should now enjoy the protectorship instead of *Cromwell*, in case I cou'd have inspir'd those on whom I shower'd down numberless favours, I won't say with a lively sense of gratitude; but with those first seeds of humanity, which ought, at least, to engage people not to betray and ruin those to whom they owe their all. Unhappy man that I am! I have not met with fidelity in one man in the world; I have been abandon'd, betray'd, deliver'd up, condemn'd to die by a most cruel sentence; and afterwards pardon'd, but with such intolerable marks of contempt and disdain, that I cannot look upon life as a favour. The king has banish'd me for life to the island of *Guernsey*. I was divided for some time, whether it wou'd not be better for me to kill myself, than to go and bury myself in this sad solitude. I was in this uncertainty, when I was plung'd again into fresh distresses, by an accident which now fills me with as much shame, as it once did, with joy and sorrow alternately.

DURING my confinement in the tower, continued general *Lambert*, I had form'd a very strict intimacy with *Venables*, who  
also

also was imprison'd in it, after his return from *Jamaica*. Altho' he had succeeded in his expedition, and had subjected this island to the *English*; the protector was not so well pleas'd with this conquest, as he was dissatisfied that he had not seiz'd upon the island of *Hispaniola*. The measures which *Cromwell* had taken at *London*, for reducing that island, appear'd so infallible to him; that being persuaded the ill success in this particular was owing to *Venables's* imprudence; he threw him into prison at his return from the *West-Indies*, where he continued till the king's restoration. I meeting with the same fate some time after; and as we were allow'd to converse with one another, he acquainted me with the secret causes why his enterprize had miscarried. He had sail'd from *England* with five thousand men; and with the protector's orders, seal'd up, which he was not allow'd to open, but when he was got to a certain latitude. A few days after they had lost sight of the *English* coasts, they met a *Spanish* vessel which was sailing for the *West-Indies*; and making themselves master of her, *Venables* found a most beautiful *Spanish* lady on board her, who was returning to *St. Domingo*, the place of her birth. *Venables*

bles was captivated with her charms, when opening the protector's orders, and finding that they were commanded to make themselves masters of *Hispaniola*, and seize first upon *St. Domingo*, which is the capital thereof; he discover'd the secret of the expedition to his mistress? She was an artful woman, and took advantage of *Venables's* weakness, to make him betray his trust. 'Tis true, indeed, that she sacrific'd her charms upon this occasion; and whether it were out of gratitude for his having given her this strong testimony of his affection, or from the love she bore her countrey, whose ruin she thought it her duty to prevent, even at the expence of her honour; she surrendred her person to her lover, as soon as he had perform'd his promise. *Venables* therefore neglected upon various pretences, to follow the plan which *Cromwell* had laid down. He made a descent at so great a distance from *St. Domingo*; that before he could put himself into a condition to besiege it, the *Spaniards* had time enough to fortify it so strongly, that it would be impossible for him to take it. He even made but very slight attacks, and merely as a blind. The conquest of *Jamaica* was afterwards the more easy, because he spar'd his

his sailors till he came upon that island ; imagining that in case he cou'd make himself master of it, this would more than atone for his ill success before *St. Domingo*. But he had to deal with a master, who was not to be easily impos'd upon ; and who, tho' he was not inform'd of the motive of *Venables's* conduct, he nevertheless threw him into prison at his return to *England*. However, the *Spanish* lady whom he brought with him into *England*, consol'd him for this disgrace. During his imprisonment, he put her into the hands of some trusty friends, who restor'd her to him faithfully. Being releas'd from his confinement, he retir'd with her to a house in the country, where she was not seen by any person but himself. I cannot say whether this dangerous creature grew weary of her solitude, or thought of methods how to return to her country ; but I cou'd easily discover, the first time I saw her, that her love for *Venables* was very much abated. This was after the king had given me my life, sentenc'd me to perpetual banishment. I was still under the guard of a state-messenger, but had the liberty to visit my acquaintance ; and as *Venables* had been one of long standing, I took a ride

to his country retirement. I was charm'd with the beauties of his mistress, who perceiving it, and in all probability, thinking I might be of service to the design she had in view; she took such advantage of the inclination she saw I had for her, and which I took an opportunity of revealing; that she impos'd upon me in such a manner, as makes me blush at my weakness and credulity when I think of it. Her beauties made a very strong impression on my heart. Having been less us'd to the pleasures of love, than the intrigues of ambition and the military arts; I was overjoy'd to find her acquiesce so easily with my wishes. I fell desperately in love with her, and thought myself infinitely oblig'd to fortune, for preparing me so sweet a consolation, after the barbarous treatment I had met with from the fickle goddess. I first thought to propose her going with me to *Guernsey*; but she assur'd me, in the most artful terms, that we should be much safer, and spend our days in a more agreeable manner at *St. Domingo*. As I was quite intoxicated with love, I made little or no objection to her proposal; and thereupon she desir'd me to enquire after a ship which might carry us to *Spain*, and I presently met with  
one



one that was ready to sail for *Cadiz*. We both stole away so happily, that we were out at sea before any one cou'd have the least suspicion of our flight, or which way we were gone. The artful fair indulg'd the utmost of my wishes ; and being arriv'd at *Cadiz*, we went on board another vessel, which carried us safe to *Hispaniola*. Here I was so much enchanted by my passion, that I did not entertain the least suspicion of any treacherous design. Her parents receiv'd her with the utmost joy ; when she inform'd 'em, I being present, that having been taken prisoner by the *English* and carried to *London*, I afterwards had procur'd her escape from thence. She did not say any thing farther upon this head, altho' we both had agreed, that I should pass for her husband, and consequently that we should cohabit together. I must confess that I was vastly uneasy, when I found she did not mention any thing tending this way ; and therefore resolv'd to reproach her for it, as soon as we were alone : but as I still continued not to suspect any thing, I imagin'd that she chose rather to declare our pretended marriage to her relations in private ; and therefore I withdrew in order to give her an opportunity for that

O 5

purpose.

purpose. She, indeed, made her advantage of it, but 'twas to deceive me in a most barbarous manner. She confess'd our whole story to her father and her brothers, who thereupon resolv'd to dispatch me some way or other; in order to bury in the same grave with me, their sister's adventures, and the scandal these might bring upon their family. I don't relate this merely from conjecture, for I heard it from their own mouths; and therefore may justly look upon it as a miracle, that I had the happiness to escape out of their hands. The fatal blow would undoubtedly have been struck the following night; but one of 'em having heard, that a vessel was to set out the next day for *Carthagera*, they chang'd their bloody resolution; and thereupon resolv'd to put me on board of her; and to accompany me to that port, whence ships are continually sailing for *Europe*. Their design in going along with me, was, that I might not have a single opportunity of discovering my intrigue with their sister, till I had lost sight of the *American* coasts; and therefore they resolv'd not to let me be a moment out of their sight. Three of these resolv'd to guard me in this manner. As I cou'd not once get  
to

to the sight or speech of my mistress all that afternoon, I at last began to suspect that matters did not go right. At night the three brothers inform'd me of the cause of it; and being, very probably, afraid, lest I should refuse to yield to their wishes, and by that means put them to some trouble; they declar'd to me, that they had first taken a resolution to dispatch me; however, as they had been so indulgent as to change it, I ought to be thankful upon that account, and embark immediately, in compliance with their desires. This plainly show'd that my mistress had impos'd upon me, and that her brothers made me their laughing-stock. In the mean time, I was so narrowly watch'd, that I found it impossible for me to make my escape. I was made to leave the city, and walk to the port before day, when I was put on board a ship, which set sail a little after. The reader will naturally suppose that I was exasperated to the highest degree. I begg'd a thousand times of heaven, to sink the ship before we sail'd out of the harbour. The three brothers kept so vigilant an eye over me, that I had no opportunity to throw myself into the sea and swim away. 'Twas now no longer

love that tortur'd my mind, but the confusion and shame I felt, to find myself so basely deceiv'd. To increase my misfortune, I scarce understood a word of *Spanish*. My guides, indeed, spoke *English* perfectly well; but I wish'd I had been able to express myself in all languages, in order to give myself the consolation, as soon as I should be got out of their hands; to publish a genuine account of the whole adventure, and to throw a lasting shame on the infamous creature who had treated me so cruelly. Whilst I was in this distraction, a strong gale springing up from the east, drove the ship a considerable way out of its course. The three brothers, who affected to treat me with the highest civility, bid me take notice of a great number of little islands, which are scatter'd up and down in this sea. They then, pointing to that in which we now are, gave me an account of one *Serrano*, who had led a solitary life in it for many years; and related so many things to the advantage of this little island, such as the beauty of the climate, and the fruitfulness of the soil; that I was at once determin'd to make it an asylum. I acquainted them immediately with my resolution, and as they had nothing to object.

object to it, they desir'd the captain to let me be set ashore on it. He granted their request, and I was put on board the long boat. Never, sure, was resolution undertaken with greater eagerness, or executed with so much courage. Scarce wou'd I accept of some provisions, which were necessary for me, 'till such time as I should be a little acquainted with the island, and be able to furnish myself with such aliments as nature indulg'd spontaneously there. I saw those sail away who had brought me in the long boat, and would not so much as look upon them, or bid 'em farewell. May the whole progeny of perfidious mankind perish! wou'd I cry out an hundred times, in the transports of hatred, which swell'd my bosom; may all the habitable parts of the earth perish, since they abound with nothing but traitors and ungrateful wretches! I will live here banish'd from them all, and by that means shall be secure from treachery. In what other place cou'd I hope to meet with greater consolation? I am excluded my country for ever. Will it be worth my while, to undertake the voyage of the island of *Guernsey*, where I am allow'd to live? I possibly might raise my fortune in some foreign court, and get some honour.



honourable employment in the service; but then what constraint must I put myself under, and how must I mask myself, in order to procure friends and patrons? And then, shall I not be surrounded with men, that is, with wicked, perfidious wretches, whose society I so much abhor; and among whom I never enjoy'd the least satisfaction, even when I most endeavour'd to imitate their conduct?

THESE reflections, continued general *Lambert*, have had the power to support me in this place for some months; and to cheer my solitary hours, notwithstanding the miserable condition to which I am reduc'd. But I must confess; that I every now and then, am out of all patience. I don't find enough within myself, to fill my imagination perpetually; and to stop the restless activity, which makes me incessantly feel, that my heart still desires something more. By a very lucky accident I got a few books; but then, if you consider that war and politicks have been the chief employments of my life, you won't be surpriz'd when I tell you that I am, not much delighted with reading; and that I perhaps peruse the finest works that were ever writ, without knowing them to be such; or, at least without  
tasting

tasting that exquisite pleasure, they would naturally give to a man who is fond of letters. I therefore shall think myself eternally oblig'd to you, in case you will be so good as to receive me on board your vessel, and carry me to *Jamaica*, to which I intend to banish myself. I am sensible that I shall meet with men in it; these will persecute and betray me again: But after I have suffer'd so much by their villainy, methinks I cannot dread it so much. As I know 'em so well, they can never treat me worse than I expect to be us'd by 'em.

ALTHO' the general had told me these particulars with some emotion, they yet were faint in comparison of those I felt, as he spoke. The very sound of his name, made my blood run cold. I knew but too well, that he had been one of the abominable instruments of my father's cruelties; and in case he really was not one of those, who sign'd the horrid sentence for executing the king; yet 'tis but too well known, that he had a great share in that crime by his detestable insinuations and counsels. So far, therefore, from finding my compassion increase for him; I was forc'd to commit a violent struggle upon myself, to restrain my indignation and the impulses of my hatred. Nevertheless, the  
rela-

relation of his sufferings gave me some anxiety for a moment. What I did not find myself prompted to from inclination, pity would have effected; had I been sure, that his abhorrence of ingratitude and treachery, arose from a love for virtue. He is a man, says I, and unfortunate, both which entitle him to my compassion. In case he has long swerv'd from duty, perhaps a happy repentance brings him again into the right path; and, indeed, his misfortunes ought naturally to produce this effect. As I made these reflections, while he was discoursing to me, it was impossible but I must discover an absence of mind. This he took notice of just as he was ending his story, when he ask'd me with a melancholly air what I thought of his calamities.

I look'd upon him stedfastly, and did not speak till after I had consider'd a moment what it wou'd be proper for me to say. *General*, says I to him with a resolute tone of voice, you have acted imprudently. You ought, for your own sake, to conceal your name, which cannot but fill all those who know you with horror. Be assur'd, that a man cannot with any grace exclaim against his fellow creatures; and call 'em perfidious wretches, when he  
himself

himself may be justly reproach'd with the same crimes. But, continu'd I, you little think who I am. Any other man but my self, who detested your wicked attempts, and all those who resemble you; wou'd not, perhaps, let slip so fair an opportunity, of ridding the earth of so wicked a wretch as you are. But as his majesty has indulg'd you his clemency, 'tis now the business of heaven to punish you. I wish from my heart, that you may escape the punishment you deserve, by a speedy repentance. Go back to *Europe*, and there spend your days, if this be not an impossibility, in a virtuous and honest way. I won't refuse to give you a cast to *Jamaica*.

THE *General* was naturally proud and haughty, and therefore this answer fill'd him with indignation. His eyes darted fire; and thereupon he cry'd aloud, be who you will, you are a base creature, to insult me in the deplorable condition to which I am reduc'd. I am alone and defenceless; but thou art arm'd, and hast many companions. I beg of heaven that I may never set eyes on you more. He then desir'd me to go out of his hut; and added, that he'd sooner die than have the least obligation to me, and therefore bid me

me leave the island, and not trouble him more. *General*, says I in a mild voice, I did not intend to insult you. I have told you frankly what I think of your past conduct; and shou'd have declar'd my thoughts with the same freedom, were we both in *England*, and you at the head of your forces. You ought to look upon my sincerity as a favour; since after I had reproach'd you with your crimes, I nevertheless begg'd of heaven to change your inclinations. Don't be exasperated without a just cause; and in case you are weary of living in this island, lay hold of the opportunity you now have to leave it. His pride was so prodigiously shock'd to hear me continue to speak to him in this manner, that he was ready to burst. He therefore rush'd out of the hut, swearing that he would find some opportunity of meeting me, when he shou'd be in a happier condition, when he wou'd make me pay dear for the reproachful words I had us'd. I did not attempt to fetch him back, but left his hut, and return'd to my companions. I thought I had done enough for a man of his character, in offering to take him aboard with us.

NEVERTHELESS, in order to make this voyage of some advantage to me, I continued



nued to view every part of the island, particularly the southern part of it; where I was very desirous of seeing, if possible, the phenomenon which Sir *George Ascough* had discover'd. As the night was not so dark, but I could see any thing of that kind, I coasted for a long time the shore opposite to *Nicaragua*; but I did not perceive the flames, or any thing of this nature in that part of the island. All I cou'd see, was, a mixture of light and darkness, behind a hill; which perhaps may appear like fire and smoke, to those who sail at some distance from that island in the night. Although there was not any thing extraordinary in this sight, we yet made towards the hill, in order to discover the cause of that appearance. The whiteness or light seem'd to increase as we drew nearer to it; when, at last, we found that it was no more than a fat and bituminous soil, on which there did not grow so much as a single blade of grass; and which was divided at certain distances by very deep ditches. Although it grew much lighter, we yet cou'd not discover those ditches perfectly, and therefore resolv'd to stay till day light, in order to view them. We then laid down in a meadow, in expectation of the dawn, which  
appearing,

appearing, we plainly perceiv'd smoke issue from several of those clifts; and that the bottom was black and dry, like a place through which fire has pass'd. They were so deep, that we did not dare to go down into any of them; but I conjectured, that whether lightning had fallen on that bituminous earth, and set it on fire; or that the heat proceeded from something under the earth, there had been a prodigious fire in that place; which shew'd there was some truth in the adventure that was related of Sir *George Ascougb*.

BEING return'd on board, the first thing I heard was, that a stranger was just come into the ship, who first ask'd where I was; and hearing I was still on shore, had desir'd to be convey'd to *Jamaica*. This person was general *Lambert*. I was told that he had hid himself in a nook of the ship, where he continu'd alone, deeply involv'd in thought, with an air of gloom upon his countenance; and that all he did, was, only to enquire who I was, and upon what motives I was come to the island of *Serrana*. As the *Spaniards* to whom he address'd himself, knew nothing of my private affairs; they therefore cou'd tell him nothing farther but that I was an *Englishman*, and that I was very intimate with  
the

the governour of *Cuba*. I therefore suppos'd, that, notwithstanding his resentments, he yet had consider'd matters coolly; and that he chose to be oblig'd to me upon this occasion, rather than continue in his solitude. I resolv'd not only to give him his passage, and use him in a handsome manner; but even not to see him till we came to *Port-Royal*, in order to save him the uneasiness which my presence must naturally give him. I order'd some of the sailors to attend upon him, and to set before him the best provisions we had on board the ship. However, he wou'd not accept of any thing but bare necessaries, and continu'd as reserv'd as ever. After we had spent part of the day in wandring up and down the island, we put out to sea; and meeting with a prosperous gale, we soon arriv'd at *Jamaica*. As the crew were going ashore, the general desir'd to speak with me privately in my cabbin, which I readily consented to. He came up to me with an air of civility; when, says he, the service you have done me in taking me aboard, makes me forget the harsh and offensive expressions with which you accosted me. I do not know what reason you cou'd have, to treat me in that manner, as I absolutely don't know

know you; and reveal'd my name and misfortunes to you, for no other reason but that they might engage your compassion. Nevertheless, I shall leave you without harbouring the least resentment, and shou'd even be proud to return the obligation. These words, being spoke in the mildest manner, made me doubtful for some moments, what answer I shou'd give him: But at last, after having reflected a little, I concluded, that one cou'd hardly expect that a man of his odious character, wou'd ever be reform'd; and consequently that he was not worth my notice. Thus, without explaining matters, I contented myself with assuring him that I did not wish him harm, and was even dispos'd to do him farther service. The only one, says he, I request of you, is, not to reveal my name to any person here; and to order also such of the sailors as may know it, to keep it a secret. This I promis'd to do, and thereupon we parted. I have never seen him since; but I am inform'd, that he is now in *Guernsey*, and there leads a calm, unruffled life.

THO' I had not any particular motive which cou'd oblige me to put in at *Jamaica*, I yet was pleas'd to be in *Port-Royal*, because

cause I met with many of my countrymen in it. I had no particular friend there; but several persons whom I had spoke with when I first visited the island, receiv'd me with great civility. I had not acquainted them with my fortune or designs; and all they knew of me, was, that I was their country-man, and had married the governor of *Cuba's* grand-daughter. As I was talking with some of them, they ask'd me whether I had not heard of the lord *Axminster*. The emotion I felt at hearing that name pronounc'd, had like to have made me reveal more than I intended to do. However, having recover'd myself, I thought proper to ask the person who put this question to me, what reason he had for so doing. He answer'd, that he had no other view in it, than only the curiosity of knowing what was become of his lordship, who had made some noise in the *West-Indies* a few years before; but since that time had disappear'd, no body being able to give any account of him: that the general opinion was, that a company of barbarous savages had put him to a cruel death; but that the king, since his restoration, had employ'd several persons to find him out, if possible, which yet had been done to no purpose; that since

my



my putting in at *Jamaica*, in my way to the land of *Serrana*, a ship had pass'd before *Port-Royal*, the captain whereof being an *Englishman*, (his crew consisting of various nations) had made great enquiry after that nobleman and his followers; but not hearing any thing satisfactory, had put out to sea again, without saying any thing with regard to the design of his voyage.

I COULD not doubt upon hearing this, but that Mrs. *Lallin* had given orders for making this enquiry. I even fancied that she herself was on board the ship they mention'd; and that not being able to hear any news at *Jamaica*, she was, in all probability, return'd to *Cuba*; in order to get some informations from the governour, whose daughter she knew viscount *Axminster* had married. I thereupon resolved to sail forthwith for the *Havana*. 'Twas a very great pleasure to me, to think that I shou'd, very likely, meet again with a lady, to whom I ow'd so many obligations. This made me think the time very long. At last we arriv'd, when I found two persons coming to meet me upon my landing. But who shou'd these be, but my brother *Bridge* and his friend *Gelin*? I was in raptures at seeing  
2 them

them, and immediately forgot our past animosities, not knowing the troubles which wou'd afterwards be brought upon me. I flew to embrace them, and expressed myself in the warmest language which friendship cou'd suggest.

THEY arriv'd a week before me, and having acquainted the governour and my wife with their names, they had met with the kindest treatment. As we walk'd towards the town, they related their adventures to me. These were a mixture of pleasures and sorrows, as always happens in those incidents which depend on fortune. Having long wandred in search of the island they so strongly wanted to find, they at last discover'd it; but had ow'd that happiness to a most fatal accident. After they had continued their course for several months since we parted; they return'd to *St. Helena*, forc'd thereto, as much by the despair they were in, of ever finding what they sought for; as by the necessity they were under of getting provisions, they having now scarce any left. They had winter'd in that island, designing to put out to sea again in the spring. Whilst they were beginning to prepare for it, they one day saw a little vessel belonging to the colony

come into the harbour, with but a few people on board her. As they were equally overjoy'd and surpriz'd, they ran to speak to them, when they caress'd them with the highest transports; but at the same time were resolv'd to watch them so narrowly, that it should be impossible for them to steal away unperceiv'd. But there was no occasion to use these precautions; for these unhappy people were coming voluntary to discover their habitation, and to sue for the governor's assistance. A contagious distemper which spread the year before in the colony, had swept away the greatest part of them; insomuch that scarce an hundred of them surviv'd. The few who remain'd, had struggled courageously with their afflictions; they had paid the last friendly office to their companions, and as the infection was abated in the beginning of the winter, they had flatter'd themselves with the hopes of repairing, in time, the dreadful havock death had made. However, as their lands lay uncultivated, and a deep melancholly reign'd; besides a thousand present difficulties, and the most dreadful fears with regard to futurity; these made 'em unanimously resolve to leave the country, and to seek for some other asylum.

This

This desire was very much increas'd, after they came to know the situation of the island. Those who were entrusted with that secret, had been forc'd to reveal it in their dying moments; and in the perpetual uneasiness which the presence of death cou'd not fail of filling every person with; they had not taken the usual care to prevent its spreading. All the surviving inhabitants were therefore soon inform'd of it; and the circumstance at last happen'd, which the wisdom and prudence of their ancestors had made 'em apprehensive of in the infancy of their establishment; I mean that when once they should come to know the place, they would be for leaving it immediately.

IN order to clear up whatever may have been found extraordinary in the description I have given of this mysterious colony; I must relate what I myself saw of it, in my return to *Europe*. The southern part of the island of *St. Helena* is surrounded with rocks, some of which are of a prodigious height, and serve as so many ramparts to that part of the island; the others, which arise no higher than the surface of the water, keep large ships from coming near it; and is inaccessible even to the smallest vessels, in case those who

steer them are not perfectly acquainted with all the turnings and windings in that part. This is the reason why this coast, which besides is far from appearing beautiful, has been a long time neglected by the inhabitants of the island. 'Twas first inhabited by the *Portugueze*; but these were but a few, and their settlement towards the north was a very inconsiderable one. But what is singular, is, that those craggy rocks which surround the southern part of the island, have a Plain in the midst of them, seventeen or eighteen miles long; and as they surround it not only on that side which lies toward the sea, but also on the land side; 'tis by that means hid from the sight every way. Whenever any of the inhabitants who go round it, perceive that the rocks lie between them and the Plain, they fancy themselves at the extremity of the island, and that there is nothing beyond it but the sea. Those who sail towards them from the south, imagine, on the contrary, that the rocks which they perceive towards the sea, are the boundaries of the inhabited and known part of the island. Thus, on both sides different rocks are seen, in the midst whereof the plain above mention'd is situated; and which  
are



are of so prodigious a height, that they all look to be but one rock, altho' the piece of ground within, is a great many miles wide.

THIS plain which is so well conceal'd, and so happily defended by nature, is the very place whither providence had conducted the *Rochellers*; and which my brother *Bridge*, calls in his relation, the island of the colony. The reader may now easily suppose, how it was possible for the inhabitants of this peaceable retreat, to spend so many years in it undiscover'd by their neighbours; and without knowing that the spot they liv'd upon was part of the island of *St. Helena*. This secret, after having been discover'd by *Drington*, had been preserv'd by a small number of old men, who had kept it inviolably, till the havock made by the infection above-mention'd, had forc'd them to reveal it. As soon as the inhabitants who surviv'd, knew that so many of their fellow creatures liv'd near them, they cou'd not but desire to have a correspondence with them; and in the perplexity with which they were fill'd, to see so many of their companions swept away, they consequently must grow weary of this once delightful solitude; and thereupon had resolv'd to dispatch some

of their people, in order to inform the governor of *St. Helena* of their distress, and to implore his assistance.

My brother and his two friends were overjoy'd at the sight of these deputies; but felt emotions of a very different nature, when they heard that the colony was ruin'd; and scarce had power to ask whether their wives were living or dead. My poor brother *Bridge* fear'd to hear the latter, as much as he wou'd to have sentence of death past upon him. It happen'd, however, by the indulgence of heaven, that the greatest loss fell on the person who was best able to bear it; I mean that *Gelin* only had lost his wife. My brother made the deputies repeat over and over, that his dear *Angelica* was living; and happy, for ever happy, says he, am I, in that I shall see, and possess her again. *Johnson* was in no less raptures. Their joy was not interrupted till they heard of Mrs. *Eliot's* death, of that of her eldest daughter, and a great many other persons, for whom they had the greatest affection. The three faithless young fellows, who had betray'd their wives and companions, had also left the world. *Gelin* was seiz'd at first with the deepest pangs; but thanks to his complexion, which

which made him equally incapable of being long afflicted; he soon recover'd so well, that his companions were no longer afraid grief wou'd prove fatal to him. My brother's impatience to see his wife was so great, that he scarce wou'd allow the deputies to declare their commission to the governor. He was of great service to 'em upon that occasion, insomuch that they obtain'd whatever they requested. A great many of the inhabitants of *St. Helena*, accompanied them in little vessels; and the governor's curiosity was so great, that he himself went also. Being arriv'd, they found so much of the antient order and discipline, remaining among the unhappy survivors, as surpriz'd them very much. *Johnson's* and my brother's unexpected arrival, fill'd their wives with inexpressible joy. They now no longer dreaded a tyrannical ecclesiastic, or severe elders, to oppose their happiness. Love, virtue and even fortune conspir'd together to reward, and make them forget their past woes. Happy husbands! who at last saw their tranquillity founded on a most solid basis, and which was not to be interrupted till death.

THE governor having offer'd to convey all the inhabitants of the colony and

their effects, to the other part of the island, there to incorporate with those who were under his government; they consented to it, and immediately prepar'd every thing for that purpose. They divided, equally, the monies which were in the store-house; and by that means each of them had a handsome competency for the remainder of his days. However, they consider'd that being protestants, it would perhaps be a very difficult matter for them to live for any time, in a good harmony with the *Portuguese*, as they are such bigots to their religion. A prudent foresight with regard to what might happen, prompted them to entreat the governor to indulge them, at some distance from their habitation, a place convenient for them to form a new one in. They promis'd to submit to his authority, provided he would allow them a liberty of conscience; and allow them the same privileges with the rest of the inhabitants. This was concluded on both sides by a solemn oath; after which, some *Englishmen* who liv'd among the *Portuguese*, join'd with their countrey-men in order to lay the foundations of a new town. It was soon built, and made regular, and has since been very much enlarg'd

larg'd by the great number of *English* and *French* refugees who came and resided among them. My brother and his friends had fix'd their abode there; and spent a year in reposing themselves after their toils, and in tasting the sweets of their good fortune. However, my brother was of so excellent a disposition, that he cou'd not resolve with himself to be happier than I was. The unhappy condition in which he had left me at the *Havana*, was incessantly present to his memory, and wou'd not suffer him to take a moment's ease. Tho' he had once abandon'd me for his wife's sake, at a time when he was really as much to be pitied as myself; he afterwards consider'd that I was his brother, and consequently had some right to his assistance. Having acquainted *Gelin* with the resolution he had form'd, of going in search of me; or at least to go as far as the island of *Cuba*, in order, if possible, to hear whether I was living or dead; he engag'd *Gelin* to accompany him. He desir'd *Johnson* to take care of his wife and daughter during his absence; and then going aboard the same vessel, which had carried them before, they sail'd directly for *Jamaica*, and afterwards for the *Havana*, where they arriv'd safe.



I WAS overjoy'd to see him, and thank'd him a thousand times when he told me what he had undertaken for my sake. I not only met with a brother ; I who had always consider'd myself as a branch that was cut away from the trunk, and had no root ; but now I acquir'd unexpectedly, what I so earnestly panted after, and what I had sought for in vain in *Serrana*, I mean a friend ; a companion of my fortune ; one who was witness to my conduct and my sentiments, and the confident of my pleasures and my pains. I discover'd to him, the vast satisfaction that this was to me. You shall not, says I, clasping him tenderly to my bosom, leave me any more ; or in case you should be forc'd to go to some place, you shall let me go along with you. You are my brother ; but I feel that you are going to be something still more dear and precious ; you shall be my tender, my faithful friend. Fortune may treat me as she pleases ; but I shall not fear the utmost efforts of her malice, provided she does but suffer me to enjoy always what I now possess. And indeed, my heart was so easy, and my imagination so agreeably fill'd ; that I cannot but consider this instant as one of the most happy I was ever blest

blest with. In the same moment, I united in the same point of sight, the several circumstances of my felicity, and I contemplated them with extasy. I held my dear brother in my arms: I was going to be clasp'd in those of my fond wife; all gloomy reflections on my past misfortunes, were now banish'd from my mind. I now wanted only to have my sister-in-law at the *Havana*; not only from the satisfaction which I propos'd to reap from her presence, but because I foresaw my brother wou'd soon grow weary of the *Havana* unless she were there, and therefore would return to St. *Helena*. This reflexion made me advise him to dispatch immediately some person whom he cou'd trust, on board the same ship which had brought me. I soon prevail'd with him to change the place of his abode, and to settle at the *Havana* with us; but could not keep him from going after his wife; he therefore told me, that he was absolutely resolv'd to embark in a few days, and fetch his wife from St. *Helena*.

My wife was overjoy'd to see him, and was much more so with the thoughts of having my sister-in-law soon with her. However, I form'd a design that gave her some uneasiness, which was, to accom-

pany my brother in his voyage. I had been so much us'd to ramble up and down the seas, that I wou'd go any where. My wife was safe at the *Havana* : A few months absence wou'd make us fonder of one another at my return : not to mention, that such is the disposition of our souls, that we sometimes have occasion for this remedy, to prevent our love from growing cold. This I had often reflected upon. A heart that is naturally tender and constant, can never grow obdurate ; but familiarity with what one loves, and a habit of seeing one another perpetually, deadens the fire of love at last. A little art keeps it from falling into a lethargy ; and the assistance, which a man who is us'd to reflection, may draw from his ideas, in order to strengthen his impulses ; renders him more susceptible of a strong and lasting passion, than the generality of mankind. In case there was a little experience in this reasoning, it yet did not proceed from a diminution of my affection for my wife ; but I had observ'd, that these little cautions, which I call art in a lover who makes use of his reason, had more than once increas'd both her ardour and mine ; and I concluded, that a circumstance which was capable of height-  
ning

ning a passion like ours, ought consequently to be more able to prevent its dying away.

I FREQUENTLY, for instance, us'd to spend the greatest part of the day among my books, and not to admit any person into my solitude. Then the image of my wife wou'd present itself a thousand times to my fancy, when I wou'd wish myself with her. I wanted something to be perfectly easy in my mind: But after I had spent the time I had propos'd in study, I return'd to her with all the eagerness of a lover, when I would be infinitely delighted with her fond endearments. My wife did not deny but she found the very same effects; and I myself plainly perceiv'd that it heightned her ardour. She would complain with a most lovely grace, of my unkindness in leaving her, and shutting myself up in my study. The uneasiness she felt in my absence, made her desire to be with me, in those hours which I spent among my books. I'll only be in the room, wou'd she say, but I wont interrupt you a moment; I myself will read some good book or other, or write down the trifling thoughts which may come into my head. I consented to indulge her this satisfaction; but found her presence

was

was incompatible with the application which study requires. If she stirr'd but ever so little, my eyes would, involuntarily as it were, be upon her; she wou'd not speak a word upon these occasions; but then a glance, or a smile, would confuse my imagination, more than the noise of a large company of people cou'd possibly have done. Sometimes, it was not in my power to continue in my seat, and check the impulse which prompted me to go and sit down by her. This wou'd fill her with the utmost joy, when she wou'd reproach me; laughing at the same time, at my great weakness, which she said dishonour'd my philosophy. We then wou'd spend the rest of the time in tenderness and toying.

To speak the truth, I cou'd not reflect seriously on this whimsical medley of grave and serious occupations, without being a little asham'd at it. My studies were of so severe a kind, that they merited respect even from love itself; and therefore I begg'd my wife not to come any more into my study; but to let me go on in my usual method. This she at last consented to, but with the utmost difficulty. However, she would sometimes come running into my study, and assure me, at her  
coming



coming in, that she'd stay but a moment: Nevertheless, she'd sometimes stay several hours, which she would employ either in entertaining me with trifles, or in buzzing about me, and tumbling over my books and papers. In fine, I at last had so much strength of mind as to tell her one day, that I was absolutely resolv'd not to be interrupted, and that I was vex'd she interrupted me so often. I can't say whether the air with which I spoke these words, was so serious as to persuade her I spoke in earnest; but having continued silent for some time, and finding I read on, she left the room without speaking a word, and withdrew into her own. I did not recollect till a moment after, the manner in which she had left me. This was a pain to me, and knowing that she was very much affected with every thing of this kind; I ran to her chamber, in order to remove the uneasiness which this might have given her. I found her seated, her head upon her hand, and the tears streaming from her eyes. She endeavour'd to assume a different aspect when I appear'd; but when I told her, that 'twas a fear of having offended her, which had made me leave my study, she cou'd not stop her tears, which began again to flow. I press'd her to tell me what it was that rais'd  
such

such tumults in her bosom; but it was a long time before I cou'd prevail with her to speak, when she cast her eyes downwards, and complain'd that I was very much alter'd with regard to her; and that I surely cou'd have but very little affection for her, since her company was so disagreeable, and that of a book so delightful. She added, she saw but too plainly, that in losing her dear father, she had lost the principal tie which bound me to her; and that in case I continued my indifference, she should be the most unhappy woman breathing.

ALTHO' I was conscious that I did not deserve such severe reproaches, I yet did not examine whether they were just or not, but endeavour'd to console her, by the most tender assurances of love and fidelity. We then were good friends. So far from being angry with her upon this account, I on the contrary, esteem'd her the more for it; and interpreted it as the effect of a great delicacy of sentiments, which ought to endear her to me the more. I even accus'd her for having till now, entertain'd a wrong idea of one of the principal duties of virtue and wisdom. The scope and end of my studies ought to be, not only to endeavour to  
procure

procure felicity, and make myself as perfect as possible; but also to make me contribute as much as I cou'd to the happiness of others: For these two obligations, affect almost equally a virtuous and reasonable man, who finds that he was form'd for society; and consequently that he owes almost as much to others, as he does to himself. Now what odd kind of fruit did I propose to reap from my studies, in case that my very application to them, produc'd an effect quite different from what reason ought to make me desire? I study, wou'd I say, to form my heart to humanity, good nature and affability; and the labour I employ to this purpose, and by which I fancy I shall attain the last mention'd perfections, remove me still farther from them; and make me be guilty of every thing, it ought to make me avoid. This occupation offends my wife, makes me absent in thought; severe, and even sour and unpolite, since my usage forc'd tears from my eyes; consequently I am far from treading the paths of wisdom and virtue; or rather, I have struck into the true path, but don't walk in it as I ought to do. I am like to a man who should endeavour to please; but who, for want  
of

of skill and address in his services, shou'd only be troublesome and importunate; by this means, the method he had employ'd to make himself be belov'd, wou'd only incur hatred.

BUT, abstracted from this motive, which was drawn merely from the ideas of order; and which acted, if I may so express myself, only on my reason; I need-ed only to follow the impulses of my heart, which alone would have suggested every thing, that was adapted to please my dear wife. I therefore appointed the hours I should employ in study, in concert with her; I fix'd such bounds to it as she desir'd; and one of the chief conditions which I was oblig'd to consent to, was, that she should be allow'd access to my study whenever she should have a fancy for it; and to intermix a little love with my most serious occupations. But she made an ill use of this liberty; for so strong was her passion, that she cou'd not bear to be a moment out of my sight. I will not scruple to own that I was as weak as she cou'd be, for she had never appear'd so charming to my eyes. The reader may remember, that she was very young when I married her, so that her charms were but just opening: However, she

she was in that bloom of youth, when beauty triumphs in its greatest perfection. Indeed the fatigues and troubles she had gone through in *America*, had chang'd her prodigiously; but then the ease and repose she enjoy'd at the *Havana*, had given her flush of health, which diffus'd the utmost grace over her whole countenance. I therefore grew fonder of her than ever. Sweetest *Fanny*! I lov'd her more dearly than I did myself. Why should I blush at so just, so lawful a passion; and how would it be possible for me to describe shortly the extremes of my ill fortune, in case I did not here confess the excess of my love?

NEVERTHELESS, as I always watch'd so carefully over my desires, as to keep them in due bounds; I therefore did not abandon myself so entirely to the transports of my present tenderness, as not to reflect often on futurity. As my heart was just as I wish'd it to be; it was necessary for my happiness, that it should always continue so. 'Twas in this view that I would frequently meditate on the nature of our inclinations and fondnesses; when putting my heart to every kind of trial, I endeavour'd to discover what was capable either to heighten or weaken its  
 sensa-



sensations. Every discovery I made, I immediately verified it by experience. Without acquainting my wife with my design, I try'd, as it were, the efficaciousness of my remedies upon her, like to a physician, who should continually study the health of a person he loves; and who, without waiting till she should be oppressed with sickness, should examine the nature of her constitution, and consider what cou'd prejudice it; should prepare preventive doses, and some times make her take them; with no other view, but only to see the effects they may produce when they may be wanted; or to prevent a fit of sickness, which certainly is a better method than to stay till the disease begins to make its attacks. I thus employ'd my whole attention and skill, in searching every thing that might fix my love in *Fanny's* heart. These short observations above mention'd, artfully carried on; had prov'd of wonderful service to this purpose; and I had experienc'd the effects of this more than once, even before I went to the island of *Serrana*, and my brother's arrival. Altho' these voluntary partings were almost as grievous to me as they could be to my wife; I yet was determin'd to this by my reason,

reason, and buoy'd up by the hopes of meeting with a strong increase of affection at my return.

I THEREFORE persisted in the resolution of accompanying my brother and *Gelin* to *St. Helena*. About six weeks after they had been at the *Havana*, we all embark'd in their ship, which I had caus'd to be well refitted and stor'd with provisions. We put in at *Jamaica*, purposely for the sake of hearing some news from *Europe*. A vessel from *England* was just come into *Port-Royal*. I went and spoke to the captain, who did not acquaint me with any considerable piece of news. But letting me into the motives of his voyage, and informing me that he was to sail very shortly for *Virginia*; he made me engage in a design, whence I am to date the æra of the most dreadful of all my misfortunes. I did not fail to ask him whether he intended to go as far as *Pawhattan*, when he answer'd, that place was to be the limits of his course. Hearing this, I desir'd him very earnestly to enquire there after one *Mrs. Lallin*, a *French* lady; and in case he met with her in that town, to inform her that I liv'd in the island of *Cuba*, with the governor of the *Havana*; and that I desir'd her to come  
to

to me the first opportunity. The captain not only undertook the commission; but added, that he would bring the lady in his own vessel, which was a trader. He had unloaded part of his cargo in *Jamaica*; and as the goods he had brought from *England* were design'd for our countrymen, he intended to sell the rest in our northern colonies. From thence he intended to return, after he had freighted his vessel with the goods of the country, into the gulph of *Mexico*; and there barter them with the *Spaniards*, for merchandise which he design'd to bring into *Europe*. This was so favourable for Mrs. *Lallin*, that I did not doubt but she might be at the *Havana*, before I was return'd from *St. Helena*. After reflecting how easily this voyage might be undertaken, I resolv'd to accompany the captain to *Pawhatan*; and was perswaded that I might justly pay this compliment to Mrs. *Lallin*, since I had receiv'd so many obligations from her. However, I consider'd that my brother and *Gelin* would perhaps be displeas'd to find I had chang'd my resolution of going along with them, altho' my company cou'd not be of any great advantage to them. I then propos'd my design to 'em, which they declar'd

clar'd to be a very just one ; and only seem'd sorry that I was going to leave them. In fine, what shall I say to justify this fatal voyage? In case all events are conducted by the hand of providence, in such a manner that nothing happens without its immediate direction ; ought I to ascribe it to any other cause than its will ; and is it not manifest, that neither wisdom nor reflection, could have chang'd its decrees?

I LEFT my friends, after having agreed upon the time when we should meet again ; and was persuaded that I should return before them. I then went on board, highly delighted with considering how agreeably I shou'd surprize Mrs. *Lallin*. In this manner my blind desire led me to destruction, for every step I now took brought me nearer it. I was going to light the fire which was to consume me ; and involve my wife, my friends and every thing I held dearest, in my ruin. To what a degree ought I to hate Mrs. *Lallin* ! a fury, whose memory I ought to abhor ! To her I owe my destruction ; and but for her, should I not have been happy ? Had not fate now softned its rigours, and had I the least reason to suspect a change ? Alas ! I was so overjoy'd

at

at my condition, that I began to forget my past misfortunes ; and now saw them only in distant prospect, when a fatal brand of hatred and discord, came and lighted again the almost dying flames ; tore open the former wounds of my heart ; and added to these the most dreadful, the most unforeseen shocks, which endanger'd my honour, my life and my reason. Nevertheless, at the same time that I accuse this lady of being the cause of all my woes, I yet must confess, that she was innocently so. In what part of the world soever, her despair and unhappy fate may have conducted her steps, this is a piece of justice I owe her. She was affable, obliging, kind to my family, of a most peaceable disposition, and incapable of contributing voluntarily to the evils she has brought upon me. She has ruin'd me, but then 'twas undesignedly ; however, 'tis not in the power of her innocence to change my wretched condition.

THE wind having continued to favour us, till we arriv'd in the mouth of the river *Pawhatan*, we arriv'd happily at the town. I was inform'd by the first person I met with, that Mrs. *Lallin* was still in it, and had liv'd there in a very honourable manner. I got this person to  
carry



carry me immediately to her house. The sight of me fill'd her with inexpressible satisfaction. I discover'd as much, and heightned her joy considerably, when I protested, that I had undertaken that voyage, purely for her sake. She accepted with pleasure the asylum, I offer'd her in the island of *Cuba*; when she besought me to believe, that next to my wife, no person in the world lov'd me so dearly as herself; and that she wou'd always endeavour to behave in such a manner, as might make her worthy my esteem. She gave me a long account of the various adventures she had met with, which mov'd me prodigiously. Captain *Wills*, to complete his villainy, had made her his wife by force; for he oblig'd the chaplain of his ship to repeat the form of words us'd in marriage; but as he had extorted answers from her, it consequently was not valid; nor, indeed, did he himself ever intend to consider himself as lawfully married to her. All he wanted was, to save his reputation, by covering his base action with that veil of honesty; and to prevent not only the scandal, but even the punishment, which he might justly dread at his return to *England*. As he was absolute monarch on board his own ship, he

forc'd Mrs. *Lallin* to submit to all his brutish laws. He had carried her to *Jamaica* and *Virginia*; and tho' he at last began to treat her a little more civilly, he yet did not use her as a wife, but as a mistress, whom he imagin'd he might dispose of as he thought proper. As for poor Mrs. *Lallin*, who was perpetually bewailing her sad fate, she had made several attempts to get out of the tyrant's hands; but all was to no purpose, so long as the captain's wild passion made him watch over her continually. At last, when it began to cool; and that he, designing to return to *Europe*, wanted, possibly, to leave her in *America*, she found he did not watch her so strictly as before. Captain *Wills* was then return'd to *Jamaica*, where he was to leave part of his forces; and had given Mrs. *Lallin* leave, to go ashore at *Port-Royal*, and stay there some days. Being there, she acquainted an honest gentleman with the barbarous usage she had met with, who thereupon promis'd to assist her in her escape; and indeed found an opportunity to put her on board a ship which sail'd for *Lucayoneca*: 'Twas not till after a great variety of adventures, and a numberless multitude of troubles, that she got to *Virginia*, where she  
flatter'd

flatter'd herself with the hopes of meeting with viscount *Axminster*, and perhaps me along with his lordship. As she had taken care to keep all the money and jewels she had brought from *France*, she was thereby enabled to lead a very agreeable life at *Pawbatan*; where her prudence and politeness gain'd her so much esteem, that several of the most wealthy gentlemen in the town, were her suitors, and were very urgent with her to change her condition.

MRS. *Lallin* was so well pleas'd with what I had done for her; and the hopes she entertain'd of living peaceably in my family, and enjoying my wife's company, sooth'd her so agreeably; that she was very impatient to leave *Pawbatan*. The captain finish'd all his affairs in a fortnight, when the wind being fair, we set sail. I had the pleasure, at our setting out, to see all the worthy part of the inhabitants discover the utmost regret at her departure, and give her the highest testimonies of their esteem and veneration.

IN the voyage, I found by her conversation, that notwithstanding the calamities she had pass'd thro', her good sense and sweet temper were not any ways diminish'd. So far from it, her sorrows

seem'd to have strengthned her reason; and I esteem'd her infinitely more, for having drawn such excellent fruits from adversity. She had a just turn of thinking; express'd herself with the utmost grace; and every thing she said was so judicious and solid, as sooth'd very agreeably my contemplative disposition. I did not conceal from her the pleasure which this was to me. I shall gain, says I, a much greater advantage by our meeting, than you; for you now will very much contribute to the happiness of my life. Those things which I thought myself bound to do for you out of gratitude, I now shall be prompted to from self-interest. Your conversation will be a kind of delightful study, whence I shall reap greater benefit, than it will be possible for me to do from books. I then told her, that I expected to meet with my brother *Bridge* at the *Havana*, whose temper and disposition and mine were very like. What a happy life, says I, are we going to lead! Our life will be a life of wisdom. We shall spend part of it in reading, and the rest in communicating our reflexions to one another. My wife too is qualified to have her share in it. Our felicity will now be perfect; for, there is no likelihood

hood that fate will ever persecute us more. Our condition of life is fix'd, so that now we seem to be secure from the malice of fortune. Such was my blindness in the greatest danger with which I was ever threatned. I was just on the brink of it, at the same time that I thought myself in the greatest security; and all things conspir'd to confirm me a long time, in the most fatal of all errors.

WE arriv'd at the *Havana*. Some business I had to do for the captain who had brought us, having detain'd me a good while in the port; my return was spread so soon, that Don *Pedro* the governor and my wife, came to me, before I had done the captain's affairs. I was surpriz'd to see the governor's coach; and believing that he was come in it with my wife; I took Mrs. *Lallin* by the hand, and walk'd with her up to the coach. My wife took her at first for my sister-in-law, whom she imagin'd I had brought from *St. Helena*. I immediately undeceiv'd her, and inform'd her that this was the lady who had writ to me when we were among the *Abaquis*; who had left *France* with me; had given me the highest testimonies of her friendship and generosity; in a word, that 'twas Mrs. *Lallin*, whom I presented



to her, a lady of the greatest good sense and merit. I then told her in very few words, the opportunity I had met with of going to *Pawhatan*; and that I had desired her to live with us, as I had agreed at her leaving *France*. Look upon her as a second Mrs. *Riding*, and I desire you to make her your friend. If the reader recollects what I have said, on more than one occasion, of my wife's temper, and of that uneasy delicacy which inclin'd her to jealousy; he then will easily account for all I am now going to relate. Let him call to mind the deep melancholly which prey'd upon her, when we liv'd among the *Abaquis*; the fears which it was not in her power to suppress even but a few weeks after our marriage; her distraction, her sighs and tears; then whoever peruses this fatal part of my story, will be much better acquainted with the cause of my calamity, than I myself was when it befel me. But who would have found it out, had not I let him into these several particulars? But as I have thus prepar'd my readers, they will clearly see into the obscurity, in which they will behold me walk. They'll have a full view of all my woes; alas! why did not some power whisper to me,  
that

that I was running headlong to destruction?

As I did not entertain the least suspicion that this interview would be attended with any fatal consequences; I did not so much as observe what countenance my wife assum'd, when I spoke the above-mention'd particulars; I was wholly taken up with the pleasure which her presence gave me, and the reflection that I had now procur'd her an agreeable friend. Nevertheless, had I examin'd my wife's countenance, I should have perceiv'd, as I since heard, a great alteration in it, as well as constraint in her whole person. The opinion my wife had entertain'd that I lov'd Mrs. *Lallin*, ever since she had known that this lady had left *France*, purely for the sake of accompanying me to the *West-Indies*; and the confirmation she imagin'd she had, by my having so long conceal'd the last mention'd particular; these two reasons, I say, were alone more than sufficient to make her hate Mrs. *Lallin*. When she found that I myself not only desir'd to have her live with us; but that I had undertaken the voyage, purely to fetch her to the *Havana*, and offer her an asylum with us; she fancied it was but too plain, that I lov'd

her ; and consequently that I had impos'd upon her, even in the very infancy of our marriage ; or did not value her, now I had met with her rival. What an unhappy progress did this reflection make, in a person of my wife's character ? Tender beyond expression ; fearful and easily alarm'd ; ever fancying I did not love her enough ; prey'd upon, moreover, by a gentle melancholly, which made her fond of solitude, in which she might indulge her meditations in my absence. Alas ! the instant of my arrival was the last of her repose. My dear wife now tasted fictitious joys only, a circumstance she nevertheless conceal'd from all ; and her habitual disposition was grief, with all the sad effects which accompany it.

I WAS so far from perceiving this change, that I, on the contrary, thought myself in the happiest period of my life. I now wanted only my brother, and his *Angelica*, and then, methoughts, I cou'd have nothing farther to wish for. I observ'd this to my wife, who answer'd with her usual tenderness. I desir'd her to use Mrs. *Lallin* kindly ; and as this lady seem'd now entirely cur'd of the passion she so long had for me ; I did not scruple to be extremely civil to her upon all occasions,

casions, which she interpreted as a mark of the great esteem I had for her. My wife would every now and then put so much a constraint upon herself, as to shew the utmost complaisance to Mrs. *Lallin*; however, it afterwards appear'd that this was merely specious. She herself wou'd be vex'd to the soul, whenever I lavish'd compliments upon a woman whom she consider'd as her rival; and discours'd to, or took a turn with her in the governor's garden. On these occasions she would often come and interrupt us; and tho' she wou'd assume a smiling countenance, I since consider'd, that I might easily have perceiv'd she was very uneasy in her mind, had I not always consider'd the uneasiness in her temper, as the usual effects of her melancholly.

DURING two months, she did not give the least indication of her being under any manner of concern upon Mrs. *Lallin's* account. But the arrival of my brother, his wife and *Gelin*, plung'd both *Fanny* and myself into an abyss of calamity. Don *Pedro*, who was vastly kind, was persuaded, as we discover'd so much joy at their arrival, that he cou'd not possibly oblige us more, than in offering to take them into his house; a favour which I at last prevail'd with them to accept of. My

brother *Bridge* lov'd *Gelin* so dearly, that he cou'd not bear to live apart from him; so that to prevail upon one of them was engaging both. This was the more easily brought about, as the governor's house, or rather palace, was so spacious, that we could all live in our several apartments without incommoding one another. Accordingly we all dwelt under the same roof.

AFTER we had spent a few days with that pleasure which the meeting of friends who have been long absent from one another, gives; each of us began to think in what manner he should employ the hours, which we cou'd not always spend together. My choice was already fix'd, viz. study; and my brother, who was no less fond of it than myself, resolv'd also to devote himself to the muses. Mrs. *Lal-  
lin* likewise determin'd to pass away two or three hours every day after the same manner; and as I had purchas'd all the good books I cou'd meet with at the *Havana*, she us'd often to come into my little library; either to chuse out such pieces as she look'd upon as the most agreeable, or to enjoy a moment's conversation with me. I also suppos'd that my wife would also give into the same amusement,



ment, as she had always discover'd an inclination for it. Nevertheless she declar'd, that she intended to keep my sister-in-law company, and to pass all her hours with her, in working at her needle. 'Twas her secret vexation, and the aversion she had to Mrs. *Lallin*, which made her take this resolution; particularly after she found, that the lady above-mention'd us'd to visit me frequently in my study; but as for my wife, she never came into it afterwards. The fondness with which she once us'd to hear and discourse with me, seem'd now entirely abated. If at any time she us'd to leave my sister, 'twas only to go and take a solitary walk in the garden, in order to ruminate upon her sorrows. I cou'd not forbear taking some notice of this change in her behaviour; but how could I possibly ascribe it to so cruel a cause, or think she was capable of suspecting the sincerity of my affection; since I was conscious to myself that I lov'd her as dearly as it was possible for man to do; and was perpetually giving her the strongest assurances of it?

As *Gelin* had not a mind turn'd for books, he us'd to be continually with my wife and sister. According to the ideas which the *French* generally entertain of

politeness and gallantry; he would have thought it the greatest rudeness not to give those two ladies his company, which he believed would be an amusement to them. And indeed he possess'd so sprightly a vein, as made it vastly agreeable; a circumstance I am oblig'd to own, notwithstanding the injury he has done me. He therefore us'd to spend part of the day with my wife and our sister *Angelica*. I will be so candid, as to believe that he had no other view at first, but to procure himself an innocent pleasure, in the company of two vastly amiable women. In case I am not mistaken in this conjecture, I ought to pity him, sensible as I am in how despotic a manner the passions triumph over the mind; and I can still fancy, at the same time that I detest his memory, that he was more unfortunate than criminal. But on the other side, in case he plung'd voluntarily into guilt; if he premeditated my destruction; and on the principles which are but too often found among the *French*, who look upon an intrigue as a piece of gallantry; will not all my readers abhor him as a monster who violated the most sacred laws, and incurr'd the guilt of the blackest crimes?

*Gelin* fell in love with my wife. In a man of his disposition and turn of mind, it was impossible for him to entertain any passion with moderation. We have seen in the relation which has been given of his adventures in *St. Helena*, that he had a subtle and inventive genius. He at first studied my wife's genius and temper very carefully, with a design to attack her virtue in its weakest part. He soon discover'd that she was of a melancholly turn of mind; but his penetrating eye discover'd much farther; and as he saw and talk'd so often with her, he cou'd not but perceive that something heavy hung upon her spirits. He was so assiduous, and watch'd her whole behaviour so narrowly, that he at last prevail'd with her to reveal, what she had till then resolv'd never to discover. On this foundation he built all his hopes of insinuating himself into her affection. I am now going to relate a train of circumstances, of which the reader will wonder how I came to be inform'd; but I will desire him to suspend his judgment, till I have acquainted him farther into these matters.

*Gelin*, after this discovery, was so vile, as to employ every artifice he cou'd think of. The first thing he resolv'd to do, was,  
to

to insinuate himself into my wife's confidence. He took an opportunity to have a private conversation with her, as she was walking in the garden. There, after a thousand protestations of the great respect and esteem he had for her; he hinted to her, not of his having taken notice of her melancholly, but that he discover'd something which would afflict her very much. He made a great many apologies for having, as he said, perhaps defer'd too long acquainting her with it; and that how strongly soever he might have been prompted to acquaint her with this incident, because of the great esteem he had for our whole family; he yet had been kept from doing it, merely for fear of occasioning some division among us. However, that as the evil seem'd to increase every day, and as it was impossible but the consequences must be of a very pernicious nature; he therefore thought himself oblig'd to inform her, that Mrs. *Lallin* was passionately fond of me; and stood so little upon her guard, that she gave the most scandalous proofs of it; that she daily spent several hours in my study, when no one was there but ourselves; that he had heard such things as he did not think proper to repeat;

repeat ; that indeed, he cou'd not affirm that I return'd her affection ; but that this was the very reason which oblig'd him to reveal these particulars to my wife, in order that she might check the progress of the evil, in case it were not too late.

THIS artful discourse had all the effect which *Gelin* promis'd himself from it. My credulous wife was firmly persuaded that friendship and good nature only, had prompted him to make a discovery, which corresponded but too well with her ideas. She first answer'd no otherwise than by a flood of tears, and complaints against fortune. *Gelin* pretended to comfort her, but 'twas in such a manner as engag'd her to reveal her mind farther. Accordingly she acquainted him with the whole subject of her grief ; and own'd that she had but too long perceiv'd, the several particulars he had inform'd her of. He even was so impudent as to confess that he believ'd I had deluded her ; and that he was but too certain, that I lov'd Mrs. *Lallin* as much as she did me. Nothing cou'd possibly be more favourable to *Gelin's* wicked view than this. What he aim'd at, was, to make himself in some measure necessary to my wife, upon pretence of administring consolation. He  
had



had observ'd, that she lov'd me so passionately, as made him imagine that her heart wou'd not be a very easy conquest; but then he hop'd, to win her favour and esteem, by his insinuating arts. A mutual communication of sentiments, and a mysterious air of confidence, are symptoms of love; and very seldom fail of being the cause, when they are not the effect of it. *Gelin*, at last, prevail'd in one circumstance, with regard to my wife, to which he aspir'd; and in case he did not win her affection, he yet gain'd the first place in her friendship and esteem.

Now, my wife and he were for ever appointing private assignations, busied in mysterious secrets, or whispering or winking at one another. Mrs. *Lallin* cou'd not look at, or speak a word to me, but immediately 'twas interpreted in the most malicious sense. *Gelin* had his eye eternally upon us; and never fail'd to acquaint my wife with every thing that pass'd between the lady above mention'd and me. In case any thing he observ'd, was not susceptible of a sinister interpretation, his malice never fail'd to make it as black as possible. His impudence went to that length, as to steal softly into my apartment, and listen at the door of my study;

study ; in order to hear what Mrs. *Lallin* and I were discoursing upon. The most innocent expressions of friendship and confidence, were poison'd and corrupted when they came from his mouth. Thus did this unworthy confident, continue daily to hasten my unhappy wife's ruin. 'Tis indeed true, that the fruits he reap'd from it, were not at all favourable to his detestable passion ; for his design was, to inspire her with love, whereas he only fill'd her with the deepest affliction. Too certain of her unhappiness, and oppress'd by the fresh confirmations she daily receiv'd of it ; she cou'd not so properly be said to live, as to languish in a perpetual despair. She now had only two occupations, both of which were of a most fatal and violent nature ; the one was, to abandon herself to grief whenever she was alone and unobserv'd ; the other, to do her utmost to conceal her uneasiness, whenever she was oblig'd to be in company. And indeed, she was not long able to bear up against these tortures. She now wasted away sensibly, and grew paler every day. The poison she had been able to conceal so long in her breast, spread, by insensible degrees, to every part of her, and began to vitiate her blood, after

ter having infected the several faculties of her soul.

DURING this, I spent my days in so much security, as made my calamity infinitely more deplorable. So far from entertaining the least suspicion, which might interfere with my tranquillity ; whenever I reflected on the change which was so visible in my wife's behaviour ; I rejoic'd at it as a circumstance I had wish'd for, and which I believ'd of the greatest advantage to her. I fancied that *Gelin* and my sister's company was so agreeable, that it had dispell'd her melancholly. Tho' this did not sooth my tenderness, because it bereav'd me of the pleasure of her conversation during part of the day ; it was a pleasure to me to consider that her mind was now at ease. I often declar'd to her the great satisfaction that this gave me ; and I thank'd *Angelica* and *Gelin* more than once, for having found out the secret to produce this happy change in her temper. But by this, I only lighted up the fire which consum'd her ; for she never fail'd to interpret these testimonies of my joy, as a manifest proof of my infidelity. I was highly delighted that she did not offer to interrupt the freedom, which was between Mrs. *Lallin* and  
and

and myself. Her presence was now become importunate and odious. Such were the sad reasonings of her sick heart and troubled mind. We still continued to converse together every day, but then 'twas always in company with others. We never us'd to retire to rest, till very late at night. I us'd to ascribe her heaviness and dejection to a want of sleep. She wou'd not indeed, refuse my endearments, but then I cou'd hardly get a word out of her; and she would pretend to fall asleep a moment after. However, I wou'd spend the night delightfully by her; happy in this single reflection, that she lov'd me entirely, and that her mind was as much at ease as my own.

NEVERTHELESS, she now began to be very much out of order; and it appear'd but too plainly by her countenance, that she was prey'd upon by some secret uneasiness. This made me very uneasy, and I took notice of it to her; upon which she told me that she was really greatly indispos'd; and took an opportunity from this, to have a separate bed made for her. Alarm'd at the slightest indisposition with which she was attack'd, I laid aside my books, and was perpetually with her. By looking at her, I found that she harbour'd

bour'd some secret uneasiness in her bosom. She spoke but very little. Her eyes wou'd sometimes fix themselves languishingly upon me; and notwithstanding her struggles to suppress her sighs, yet these would sometimes steal from her. My sister told me in confidence, that she believ'd that her disease was not so much in the body as the mind; and therefore was persuaded, that my wife had taken something very much to heart. I then took an opportunity, when no one was in the room but my wife and I, to embrace her with all the tenderness imaginable; when I conjur'd her to lay open her whole soul to me; to me her dear husband, a man who idoliz'd her; and cou'd never enjoy a moment's peace, in case she were not perfectly easy in her mind. She appear'd to be in doubt for a few moments, as tho' what I now spoke, had rais'd the strongest emotions in her mind; and that she was just going to reveal all her pangs to me. Alas! I am sure of it; this fatal secret was got so far as her lips; and we might have still been happy, had it but forc'd its way thro' her mouth. But some fatal reflection, which was owing to the sinister inspirations of *Gelin*, made it return to such substantial gloom, as was impenetrable.



penetrable to my eyes. She answer'd me with a sigh, that it was not always in her power to banish her reflexions; that the tragical scenes which her father and mother had past thro', would often paint themselves in her imagination, whatever struggles she might make to remove them from it; that she cou'd never recollect without shuddering, the several cruel disasters which had destroy'd her family; that as she had not the least room to hope, that heaven would soften its rigour; she expected that her life wou'd end as unhappily as it had begun. When she spake these last words she cou'd not keep back her tears; and her heart, which was oppress'd with sorrow, eas'd itself by venting a prodigious number of sighs.

THE sad condition I then saw her in melted me to such a degree, that had she been ever so little in her right senses, and capable of forming a true judgment of things; it would have been impossible, but the sincere marks I gave of affection and grief, must have convinc'd her of her injustice and my innocence. I took one of her hands, and squeez'd it against my cheek. Dearest *Fanny*! says I, with a most passionate tone of voice; lovely creature who alone art capable of charming  
ing

ing all my cares to rest! how is it possible for you, to afflict yourself by such unjust fears, and by calling up things in your memory, which ought to be blotted eternally from it! Time past is not in our power; but what do you see in futurity that ought to give you pain? Don't we enjoy each other? Will it be possible for any power to prevent me from making you my idol; You, from loving me, and being mine for ever? And in case you are as certainly persuaded of this as you ought to be, can fate ever annoy us more? No, no, says I embracing her; that person is not sensible of the value of the happiness he enjoys who is perpetually afraid of losing it. Your heart is too much afflicted, but I will teach you how to make it easy;—banish fear from it, and let it always be fill'd with love.

As I had no reason to doubt of her sincerity, I look'd upon the answer she made me, as a real confession of the uneasiness she felt; and therefore thought only of procuring her such amusements as might drive away the melancholly with which her spirits were clouded. For this purpose, I desir'd several ladies of the greatest distinction in the *Havana*, to come and divert my wife every day with  
their

their company, and I never fail'd to give them mine. Whether it were owing to the diversions we then took, or to my being continually with my wife; she recover'd in a very little time, after which we each resum'd our usual exercises. I observ'd that *Gelin* was vastly assiduous about my wife, during her indisposition; but this I imputed wholly to his friendship and generosity.

I was oblig'd some months after, at the governor's request, to go upon some affairs he had at *Vera Cruz*. The voyage thither was more tedious than fatiguing. At my return from the place above mention'd I found my family and friends in good health. *Gelin* was upon a better foot than ever with my wife, that is, he continued to poison her by his wicked insinuations. He did not fail to make her take notice, that tho' I had been absent some months, I yet was as fond of Mrs. *Lallin* as ever. In case I had not the strongest proofs by me, and which I shall mention hereafter, of my wife's virtue; it would seem incredible when I assure my readers, that tho' she had a very great affection for *Gelin*, and made him the confident of all her woes, he yet was never able to seduce her. This vile wretch  
had

had gain'd so great an ascendant over her, that she never undertook any thing without consulting him first. All that now remain'd, was to disclose his passion to her; and this he did in so artful a manner, that it was impossible for her to be offended. Nevertheless, as the reception his declaration met with from her, check'd his boldness in such a manner that he did not dare to repeat it; and the severity of her virtue having made him despair of ever being able to conquer it; he found himself reduc'd to his first design, which was, to blow up the fire of jealousy still more in her soul; firmly persuaded, that when once she would cease to esteem, she wou'd cease to love me; and that 'twould be easier for him to insinuate himself into her heart, after I was banish'd from it. He affected therefore not to have a passion for her, but seem a disinterested friend. My wife, who was a woman of the sweetest temper; and who never had that kind of experience, which teaches the fair sex to mistrust mankind; thought she might without the least danger, indulge her esteem and confidence to a person who seem'd so kind to her. She moreover had heard my brother very often applaud the generosity of his friend *Gelin*, and had  
seen

seen me treat him with great civility; and to do him justice, he possess'd all the qualities which form, in the opinion of most people, the gentleman, and the man of merit. Gods! how is it possible for me to speak with so much temper, of a barbarous wretch, who plung'd me in misery and despair.

BUT the time of my ruin was at hand. *Don Pedro*, being worn out with old age, and sensible that he had not long to live, made his will, by which he bequeathed to me all his possessions. He did not long survive this sickness, and a violent fever carried him out of the world. As soon as we had discover'd our gratitude, by burying him in a most magnificent manner, I now resolv'd to sell the estate he had left me, and return to *Europe*. I resolv'd to fit out a ship at my own expence, purposely that I might regulate our course as I pleas'd. The possessions which now devolv'd upon me were so considerable, that I consider'd the expence of a vessel but as a trifle; and as I was resolv'd to sail directly for *England* with my family, my friends and riches. I therefore did not think it altogether safe to trust myself with a *Spanish* captain. My brother had sent back to *St. Helena*, the



vessel which had brought him with his wife and *Gelin*. I therefore purchas'd one which was built a few weeks before the governor died; and gave such urgent orders, that it was equipp'd with all possible dispatch. But as we were preparing to leave *Cuba*, I heard my brother express his sorrow, at his being oblig'd to leave their friend *Johnson* in *St. Helena*, now he was going to return to *England*. I lov'd my brother *Bridge* as dearly as I did myself, when I reproach'd him for not acquainting me sooner, that he so earnestly desir'd to take *Johnson* along with us. You should, says I, have brought him with you, when you came hither to settle with us. Whosoever you love, cannot fail of being dear to me. But I have thought, says I, of a remedy upon this occasion, and that is, by going round by *St. Helena*. 'Tis not such a vast way about; and besides the satisfaction you will taste of meeting again with him and his wife; you will likewise have the pleasure to see the delightful spot where your *Angelica* was born, and of which you have related so many wonders. My brother was overjoy'd at this proposal, a little after which we embark'd, and sail'd directly for *St. Helena*.

WE had a very prosperous voyage; however, we were not without fears during our course, as a war had broke out between *Great Britain* and *Holland*. *Holmes*, with an *English* squadron of ships, had seiz'd upon the islands of *Cape-Verd*, and some forts on the coast of *Guinea*, belonging to the *Dutch*. I had heard before my leaving the *Havana*, that the States of *Holland* had a little before, sent admiral *Ruyter* with a considerable fleet into those seas; and as he was so exasperated against the *English*, I consequently should be expos'd to the greatest danger, in case I should happen to fall into his hands. 'Twas not indeed, that we could naturally expect to meet with him; but 'tis well known that at sea, a gale of wind often brings ships together in a very little time, which before were a great number of leagues from one another. This made me put out *Spanish* colours, and desire all the *Englishmen* who were on board us, not to speak a word in their own tongue, in case we should be so unhappy as to fall in with *Ruyter's* fleet. Had I not made use of this stratagem, we should have infallibly been taken; for we met the *Dutch* admiral in the *Ethiopic* sea, and our preservation was owing whol-

ly, to the artifice above mentioned.

AFTER I had so happily escap'd this danger, I did not expect, as every thing now seem'd to conspire to make me happy, that my wife and a friend would prove my ruin. My whole life had been a continual series of ill fortune, and I had but too justly been distinguish'd by the name of the unhappy man; but then I had hitherto been always forewarn'd of the impending danger. Besides, whenever I had lost any thing that was dear to me, I still had always something left that was still dearer to me, and which, was able to console me from this reflection; viz. that tho' heaven had depriv'd me of what I had a high value for, it had yet been so gracious as to spare other things, the loss of which would have afflicted me infinitely more. But on this occasion, fortune, without giving me the least warning, without allowing me a moment's reflection; and at once, with a single turn of her wheel, throws me to the bottom, and fixes me there, without the least hopes of ever rising again. The fickle goddess deprives me of every hope, and denies me every consolation; in a word, she reduces me to the wretched condition which I am now going to describe; a state which  
the

the reader will scarce think me capable of falling to.

WE now were arriv'd at *St. Helena*. A *French* ship which had been in *India*, was coming into the harbour at the same time with us, and we landed at the same time. The first news my brother heard, was, that his friend *Johnson* and his wife were dead. As this afflicted him to a very great degree, I spent some days in comforting him. We had nothing more to do but to set sail, after we had visited the spot which the colony inhabited; and this was an easy matter for us to do, because as the *Portuguese* had blown up some of the rocks which separated it from the rest of this island, the way to it by land was open. We now thought of setting sail again; and as we did not intend to put into any port till we were arriv'd in *England*; I assur'd Mrs. *Lallin*, and *Gelin* who was a *Frenchman*, in the most polite terms, that I was overjoy'd when I reflected, that it wou'd now be in my power, to procure them a happy asylum in the place of my birth— Most fatal signal of my ruin; for my wife had made an oath never to set her foot in *England*, in case I should convey Mrs. *Lallin* thither. *Gelin's* artifices had made her take

this fatal resolution; and finding it wou'd be impossible for her to do this, unless she stole away with him; she consented to it, when she knew certainly that I intended to take her rival along with me. The following night was pitch'd upon for her elopement; and the most horrid circumstance of all, is, that my wife stole out of bed where she was lying by my side, to fly with a base wretch, who perhaps laugh'd at her weakness, in the very moment that he carried her off as his prey; and imagin'd himself upon the point of triumphing over her virtue and honour.

THIS abominable incident was not known till the next day, and 'twas even very late before it was confirm'd. The *French* vessel was gone, and neither my wife or *Gelin* were to be found. They were first sought after very carefully; the strictest enquiry was made if any person had seen them; but after this had been done to no purpose, every one supposed what had really happen'd. Perhaps I was the only person in the whole island, who had not yet heard of it. I ask'd a multitude of times where my wife was. So long as it was not known what was become of her, all the answers I receiv'd



ceiv'd gave me great uneasiness; and after every one knew she was fled, they did all that lay in their power to conceal that sad circumstance from me. Nevertheless, as it would be impossible for them to conceal it from me longer than that night, my brother *Bridge* resolv'd to acquaint me with it. This dear brother, who lov'd me with an excess of tenderness; and was so much afflicted, that he stood almost as much in need of consolation as myself; was in great perplexity when he found himself oblig'd to speak, and did not know what expressions to employ on this occasion. He was sensible by what I had assur'd him a thousand times, that I lov'd my wife to distraction; he knew all the secrets of my heart, which I had never scrupled to lay open to him. And, indeed, all my passions were absorb'd, as it were, in this; incessantly attentive to the impulses of my heart, and to regulate its inclinations; the only liberty I indulg'd it in, was, the being tender, and devoting itself entirely to love. This was the only pleasure of my life, the charm of every anxiety, and more than paid for the perpetual constraint, in which I kept the rest of my desires. Reason, duty, the natural pro-

pensions of an infinitely tender heart ; in short, every thing conspir'd to make love essential to my happiness. And, indeed, I had made this so habitual to me ; that in like manner as it is not possible to live without breathing, neither cou'd I be happy without loving, and being belov'd by my wife. This my brother knew but too well, and consequently was but too sensible, that the news he was going to acquaint me with, would be like a thunderbolt.

I was alone in my chamber, with a book in my hand. The air with which he entred made me shudder, as it at once discover'd, that something very fatal prey'd upon his spirits : But then, was it probable that I should guess the cause of it ? I at first imagin'd he was taken suddenly ill ; or fancy'd that something he had heard, gave him a deadly pain. However, he did not leave me long in doubt, I rose up, but he bid me sit still. He then seated himself down by me. Observing that he chang'd countenance, and falter'd in his speech, I was struck dumb, and had only the power to keep my eyes fix'd upon him. Unhappy brother ! says he, in what manner shall I prepare you to hear the most deadly news ? Does not your heart

heart already bleed? ill-fated *Cleveland*! don't you partly guess, what I have not the power to relate? These few words, utter'd with a most passionate tone of voice, seiz'd me with horror. Notwithstanding the croud of dreadful ideas which presented themselves on a sudden to my mind; methoughts I knew but too well, what he was going to tell me. My wife, says I, with a most sorrowful voice; my wife is dead! No, says he, interrupting me; what I am now to inform you of, is more terrible than her death—Alas! says I, end what you have to say, and kill me at once. This, reply'd he, melting almost into tears is the very thing I was afraid of. Too unhappy *Cleveland*! I know what I am now going to say will pierce your heart; but I cannot either disguise or conceal your misfortune. But, dear brother, added he embracing me; you are inform'd with a spirit of resolution and constancy; receive the fatal news which I am now going to relate with the same intrepidity you've heard others of—a baleful nature. Consider that neither you nor myself were form'd for happiness; and that as heaven allotted us both to be miserable, our destiny must be fulfill'd. I then endeavour'd to inspire myself with

some resolution, and cried; well, tell me all you have to say; don't conceal a single circumstance; I am ready to hear any thing. In case my *Fanny* is not dead, I believe I have strength of mind sufficient to bear up against any other shock.

AFTER wishing that I might be so, and saying he believ'd I would not look upon my wife's death as the greatest evil that cou'd befall me; he thereupon gave me an account of her being fled away with *Gelin*, and the several circumstances he could discover of it. They, says he, stole away in the dead of night, with no other attendants than *Gelin's* valet de chambre and a waiting woman. They took very little wearing apparel with them, but provided themselves with a very considerable sum of money. *Gelin* undoubtedly found it an easy matter to be receiv'd on board; and in all probability had insinuated himself into the *French* captain's friendship, during the time of his being in the harbour. They had set sail before day, a circumstance which plainly shew'd there was some understanding between them. My brother, after saying these words, vented a thousand imprecations against *Gelin*; and whether it were to sooth my grief, by discovering how deeply he himself was affected;

affected; or that his good nature made him be really as much concern'd as he seem'd to be; he shew'd by a thousand circumstances that he was inconsolable.

As for me, who thought I was now as wretched as it was possible for me to be; I yet bore up for some moments, against the attacks of the most cruel despair. I even struggled with myself, tho' this put me to incredible torture, to assume the air of constancy and resolution which I had so much boasted to my brother. 'Tis plain, says I with a faint tone of voice, that I am the most unhappy man breathing. I am so, even beyond my fears and my imagination. What I now hear is undoubtedly more sad and grievous than my wife's death, and a thousand times more insupportable than my own could be. I suppose, says I, endeavouring to put on a resolute countenance, that you are sure what you have told me is fact? He answer'd, that I ought to believe that 'twas but too true, since he thought it impossible to conceal it from me, and necessary to reveal it. He added to this confirmation, some reflections with regard to the course he thought it would be proper for us to take; such as, to embark forthwith, and to sail after the



*French* vessel, which, says he, we may be so fortunate as to come up with. I had strength of mind enough to listen to him, and to answer to what he propos'd. But tho' my soul had still so much command over itself as to constrain itself to such a degree; it yet had not the ascendant over my senses, to bear me up any longer against grief and affliction. The cruel emotions which tortur'd my heart, communicated themselves in an instant to my brain; I was sensible that my rational faculties were clouded on a sudden; I put out my hands towards my brother, as tho' the ground was stealing away from under me, and that I endeavour'd to catch hold of something. O brother! says I, I am a dead man.— And indeed I fell in a swoon.

He immediately call'd for assistance, and endeavours were made a considerable time to revive me, but to no purpose. Mrs. *Lallin* and my sister did all that lay in their power, when at last I recover'd; but then my spirits were so prodigiously exhausted, that 'twas an hour before I was able to speak a word, and to inform them that I was better. My eyes were still shut, and I was leaning against the back of my chair. I breath'd very short. I heard every thing that was spoke, but  
I nei-

I neither found myself either able or willing to utter a syllable. Let the reader figure to himself a victim stretch'd at the foot of the altar, after having receiv'd his death's wound: This was exactly my case; having no other motion but a violent palpitation, which communicated itself from my heart to every part of my body, and caus'd a visible tremor in all my limbs.

HOWEVER, being at last recover'd by the pains that was taken, I embrac'd all those who had been so active in my recovery. I said to them, alas! your friendship has not done me a good office, in thus recalling me to life: You are not insensible how burthensome it is to me: You saw that nature spake plain by my fainting away so long a time. • Why did you revive her? Is it not manifest, that she is too weak to bear up any longer against a calamity, since the first shock of it dejected her in such a manner?— My friends answer'd, that they were sure my courage would support me. I took this opportunity to beg them to leave me alone: I beseech you, says I, to go away for some time, in order that I may endeavour to call up my spirits. Altho' I had not so completely conceal'd my despair, but they manifestly saw I was  
strongly

strongly affected; they yet believ'd me, when I assur'd them, that I would not attempt any thing against my own life: and thereupon they were prevail'd upon to leave the room. My brother ask'd me, whether I did not think it proper to go immediately on board a ship and pursue *Gelin*; when I told him, I would do whatever he thought proper, and relied wholly on his prudence and affection. Accordingly he prepar'd every thing for our embarking with so much dispatch, that we were enabled to set sail the next day.

THE reader will suppose, that I did not abandon myself wholly to his conduct, merely out of indifference: On the contrary, my brain was in the utmost confusion; and 'twas this very reason that prompted me to leave the care of every thing to him, whom I knew to be a man of the utmost prudence, and intirely devoted to my interest. I will confess, that I was then wholly incapable of forming any resolution; and so great was the hurry of my spirits, that I cou'd not discover which were the impulses that had the greatest ascendant over my soul. I was incapable, after reflecting two hours alone, to answer myself directly, when I enquir'd.

enquir'd of my own mind, whether I lov'd or hated my wife; whether I wish'd it were more in my power to force her away from *Gelin*; or whether it were not better for my own honour and even my repose, to abandon them both to the justice of heaven, and their ill fate. I had not strength of mind sufficient to pursue this enquiry for a minute together. I cou'd not employ half that short space, in representing my wife voluntarily resolv'd to abandon her husband and her children; leaving my bed to follow an adulterous wretch, who, perhaps, all the time I was speaking, held her in his arms. Gods! my brain turn'd at the very thoughts of it; and not finding myself able to bear the presence of that idea even for a moment, I diverted my attention from it, in order to bewail my ill fate; without almost so much as daring to turn my thoughts to that weak, that wicked creature.

THIS state of mind, which I here give an account of in few words, was a long time habitual to me. The weight of my misfortunes was confin'd, as it were, at the bottom of my heart. My courage employ'd itself less in healing my struggles, or diminishing it by my reflections; than in deluding and imposing upon my fancy,

fancy, in order to remove it from my sight. My soul started back at this object, as my hand would have done, had I laid it unguardedly on a hot iron. Nevertheless, every thing contributed to bring me back to it; my children who were continually before my eyes; my sister-in-law who was for ever bewailing the shame to which her friend had brought herself, and who repeated *Gelin's* name a thousand times with the utmost detestation; and even Mrs. *Lallin*, who encreas'd my tortures, and awak'd them every instant, by the very expressions she employ'd to console me. As for my brother *Bridge*, who was the only person to whom I was willing to discover all my weakness, he would have contributed more to my cure than any other person, had I been capable of taking remedies. In the wisdom and prudence of this dear brother, in his sweet temper, his tender and sincere affection, I should have found the most solid consolation. But so far from reaping the fruits, which I had reason to believe his friendship would one day produce; such was the cruelty of my fate, that he himself prov'd the catastrophe of my sufferings in *America*. The reader will see by his example, whether virtue may expect to be rewarded,



warded in this world ; and by mine, that the progress of ill fortune may be infinite, since a man may be still more unhappy, after he had believed himself infinitely so.

THO' we had embark'd in so much haste at *St. Helena*, yet the winds were so contrary, that we did not advance very far in our course. My brother was vex'd to the soul at this, as it depriv'd us of all hopes, of our being able to come up with the *French* vessel we were in pursuit of. As for myself, whose ideas were always so wavering and uncertain, that I did not know what to fear or desire, I was employ'd much less in reflection, than in groaning internally. 'Twas three months before we got to the coast of *Spain*. I had taken some *Spanish* gentlemen of distinction on board my vessel at the *Havana*, and promis'd to land them at *Corunna*. My brother did not forget to bid the pilot steer for that place, where we arriv'd very happily ; but as we did not intend to stop there, we did not go into the harbour. *Bridge* made us cast anchor at some distance, and going into the long boat with the *Spaniards* and three *Englishmen*, they got ashore in a very little time. He was prompted to this merely out of  
curi-

curiosity ; and he had entreated me over and over to land with them, in order to divert me ; but as neither this, or any thing else, was capable of soothing my uneasiness, I begg'd him not to insist upon my going. Alas ! I refus'd him ; my design, was, to fly from a pleasure I was incapable of tasting ; and heaven, who was resolv'd to pour all its wrath upon me before my return to *Europe*, took this opportunity to complete my ruin.

My unhappy brother therefore put into the harbour of *Corunna*. He himself soon inform'd me of the particulars I am going to relate. After being got ashore, he took leave of the *Spanish* gentlemen, who design'd to ride post to *Madrid* ; and as after this, he intended only but to take a view of the city, he spent the greatest part of the day in rambling up and down, intending to return on board in the evening. He was even returning back to the harbour, in order to go into the boat, when he found himself pull'd by the arm ; and turning about, who shou'd this be but *Gelin*. How prodigious was his surprise ! Scarce cou'd he believe his eyes ; and so great was his confusion, that he was struck dumb. Nevertheless, the villain threw himself about his neck, embrac'd

brac'd him with the utmost tenderness; and seeming overjoy'd at meeting him, he declar'd that having perceiv'd him at a little distance from the port, he could not forbear running up, to assure him that he lov'd him as dearly as he did himself, and valued him more than any other friend. Thy friend! says my brother *Bridge*, who was no sooner recover'd from his surprize, when he was fir'd with inexpressible rage and indignation: Traiterous villain! Is it not thou who hast dishonour'd my brother, and violated the most holy laws of honour and friendship? With what face dost thou presume to appear before me, and how dost thou think to escape the punishment due to thy crimes? Altho' *Gelin* could not naturally expect a more favourable reception, he nevertheless seem'd confus'd, and did not know what to say. A person shou'd be thoroughly acquainted with his genius and character, otherwise he could not so well account for the most odd circumstances in this adventure. It must be own'd that this wretch had a thousand good qualities. He was a man of sense, was generous and tender hearted; so that nothing but a most violent passion, could have made him guilty of such base actions; however as his  
viva-

vivacity and fire would not allow him time for reflexion; he had banish'd every thing from his mind, which did not tend to promote his passion. How desperate soever his fondness for my wife might be, and tho' he could not but be sensible that he was guilty of the highest crime: As he yet had so great an affection for my brother, he cou'd not forbear running to and embracing him. Possibly his heedlessness prevented his considering that he might justly dread his rage; and could no longer expect to be treated by him in a friendly manner. Be this as it will, he discover'd more grief than resentment; and melting into tears, he begg'd to speak with him a moment in private.

My brother consider'd at first whether it would not be proper to get him seiz'd. Nevertheless, as he was so tender hearted and compassionate, that he cou'd not see him weep, without being a little affected at it, and feeling some returns of their former friendship; he consented to hear him. *Bridge* imagin'd, that his tears, and even his boldness in presuming to approach him, might perhaps be the effects of his repentance; when withdrawing with him to a place upon the sand, where no one could hear them; they began a discourse,  
of

of which the reader might form a judgment from the conclusion, tho' I were not to repeat the beginning of it. *Gelin* confess'd at once that he was guilty; but imputing his crime to the violence of an unlimited passion, he endeavour'd to excite my brother's pity, and to persuade him that he did not deserve his hatred. Says *Bridge*, in what light ought I to consider you, since you have betray'd my friendship and the confidence I repos'd in you; when you bring my family to shame; and stab a brother to the heart, whom I love as I do my soul. Perfidious *Gelin*! What had we done to you? Did not I always treat you as the dearest friend I have in the world? Did not my unhappy brother believe you to be so? and did not he, at my desire, use you in so kind, so tender a manner, as deserved the highest returns of gratitude from you? Did he not offer you his house, and part of his possessions? Cou'd he possibly have been kinder, tho' you had been his brother? And what returns have you made? You have rewarded him with infamy! You assassinate him in the most cruel manner, by forcing away from him what he held most dear! Tell me after this if you merit my compassion, and whether you don't deserve  
my



my hatred; I, who ought to detest you more than *Cleveland*! For does not all your villainy reflect upon me? Did not I introduce you into his house? Did not he indulge you his friendship and confidence merely upon my account? At the same time that I here reproach you with our common calamities, has not he a right to reproach you, in particular, with his own? But what have you done with his wife, continued *Bridge*? Did you make haste to complete our shame and infamy? Were not your infamous desires soon indulg'd? She, no doubt, has conspir'd with you to bring us to dishonour; and you have undoubtedly repeated your guilt several times.

NOTWITHSTANDING *Gelin* persisted so obstinately in his guilt, I yet was inform'd by my brother that these reproaches had struck him to the heart; so that he made a very confus'd apology. However, being again urg'd, and undoubtedly with too much warmth, to tell the place whither he had carried my wife, and if he us'd her kindly; he answer'd in a very haughty tone, that she was safe; and that he would always use her much better than I had done. These last words stung my brother to the quick. How!

perfidious wretch! dost thou pretend to keep her? I shall do so, says he, as long as she will be satisfied with my services, and shall stand in need of my assistance. Perhaps my brother was in the wrong, not to ask him what he meant by these last expressions. Altho' I did not understand the meaning of them better than he did when he related them; I yet found a long time afterwards, that with a very little explanation, they perhaps wou'd have let me into that fatal mystery: And altho' this would not have lessen'd my calamity, it yet wou'd have enabled me to support it with greater courage: Perhaps *Gelin* had so much friendship left for my brother, that he would not only have told him where he had carried my wife, but even the reasons of her elopement, and such circumstances as might have lessen'd the infamy of it. 'Tis very probable, that had my brother kept his temper a little more, he would have avoided the danger that threatned him. But he was hurried away by his own and my evil genius; and he, tho' a man of the utmost sweetness of temper, gave too great a loose to his resentment, to see himself basely us'd by a perfidious friend,——What's that you say, says my

my brother? so long as she may be satisfied with your services? I see you are so far from giving some tokens of repentance, as I imagin'd you wou'd, that you heighten your ingratitude with raillery, and your treachery with the basest insults— Go! we'll take a proper course with you, and bring you to the punishment you deserve— Saying these words, which he utter'd in a most violent passion, he endeavour'd to seize him by the throat, in order to drag him to the ship, and there consult with me, what it wou'd be proper to do with him.

*Gelin* was very strong, so that after struggling a little, he got loose, and took to his heels. However, seeing himself closely pursued, and finding he should be forc'd to run by the long boat, when it would be impossible for him to escape from our *Englishmen*, who already were running to lay hold of him; he resolv'd to stick at nothing that might favour his liberty. Accordingly, he drew his sword, and turning about upon my brother, he ran upon him with so much fury, that tho' he had time enough to draw his, and to stand in a posture of defence, he yet was so unhappy as to receive a thrust quite through his body. Upon this poor

*Bridge* fell, and when *Gelin* drew his sword out of his friend's body, he saw it follow'd by a torrent of blood. This sight struck him to the heart; when forgetting that his own life was in danger, he threw himself upon the ground by him, and embrac'd him a thousand times.

WHILST he held him in his arms, and was begging his forgiveness, and venting the most lamentable cries; the three *Englishmen* who had redoubled their speed at seeing the swords drawn, were almost come up to the place where their master lay weltring in his gore. In their fury, they did not distinguish whether it was love or hatred, which had prompted *Gelin* to cleave in this manner to my brother's body; and thereupon they instantly thrust their swords into *Gelin*, who, nevertheless did not offer to make the least defence. My brother was not quite dead, but then he had quite lost his senses. They then consulted what was to be done. As they did not know what treatment they might meet with from the *Spaniards*, in case they shou'd be found standing over the two bodies, which now seem'd to be quite motionless; they concluded, that the safest way would be to carry off their master's body, and to get on board

as fast as possible. Accordingly they brought the long boat to that part of the shore nearest which this bloody scene had happen'd; and getting into her, they got on board before it was quite dark.

So fatal an accident as this, was soon known all over the ship. As my brother was universally belov'd, his death which was now thought but too certain, drew tears from the most hard-hearted. Altho' I had hitherto taken but very little notice of whatever was doing in the vessel; I yet was very much surpriz'd to hear so unusual a noise. I was afraid that during my brother's absence, who acted as my lieutenant, some disturbance had broke out among the sailors; and thereupon I sent for a servant who always waited in my cabin, to enquire what was the matter. The noise was now over, but my servant did not return; for he was kept back, in order that he might not carry the sad news into my cabin, where myself, my brother's wife and her daughter were. By this means they did my sister and her daughter a considerable piece of service, as it prevented their being seiz'd with the deepest affliction; and gave them an opportunity



tunity of being prepar'd for it. But with regard to myself, who was always accusom'd to judge of an incident upon the least notices of it; 'twas of very little signification, how and in what manner, I was made acquainted with the most tragical accident. In the condition I was, nothing could shock me so much as the news of my brother's death. Possibly I might not have form'd the same judgment before it happen'd; but then I could not think it was so near at hand; and wholly employ'd, as I then was, with the thoughts of my wife's infidelity; nothing more terrible presented itself to my fancy, than the present object of my pangs.

I EXPECTED the return of my servant, or rather my uneasiness and curiosity had ended with the noise; when the fellow I had sent out, return'd, and whisper'd me in the ear to come out a moment. I found one of the three *Englishmen* who had gone ashore with my brother at *Corrunna*, waiting for me without. He then inform'd me in few words, that his master was dying or dead; but that having fell with the wound he receiv'd, he and his comrades had been so fortunate as to bring him aboard; and that they had

taken care, before he brought me this melancholly news, to get his wound drest. He added, that they would have acquainted me sooner with it, had they not been afraid of allarming me too much; and that they had thought it proper to inform me of it before my sister; in order that I should put 'em in a way, how to acquaint her with so lamentable story. I applauded his prudence and discretion, and immediately bid him show me the cabbin where my brother lay; and at the same time order'd that they should not acquaint the two ladies with any thing till my return. Altho' I could not be troubled as I was following the *Englishman*; I yet was so far from thinking my brother was in the lamentable condition in which I found him; that I thought he was only hurt by a fall or something of that nature. Nevertheless, the mournful air, and the deep silence with which he held out his hand to me, the moment I appear'd, fill'd me with the deepest uneasiness. I then went up to embrace him, when I found him pale, weak, and scarce able to utter a syllable; in a word, as it was natural for a man to be, who had lost so great a quantity of blood, and fainted away for two hours. I ask'd  
him,

him how all this had happen'd; and by what accident he was reduc'd to this fatal extremity? Tho' he had scarce strength to open his lips; nevertheless his answer made me guess at the horror which awaited me, by heightning my present pangs, with the idea of the fresh tortures with which I was threatned. He told me in what manner he had met with *Gelin*; the discourse he had with him, and the little benefit he reap'd from it; but how he thought what he had heard did but too much confirm her infamy; and therefore that I ought to banish her for ever from my mind. He told me in what manner he had been stabb'd, and how *Gelin* had thrown himself upon him; but whether that vile wretch was dead he could not tell. After having spoke these words, he continued silent for some time, as tho' he wanted to take breath; and look'd upon me with an eye, expressive of the utmost grief as well as weakness. Such, dear brother, says he, is the wretched condition of us both: but I have this advantage over you, that the moment is at hand when I shall be equally insensible of pleasure or pain; a moment in which every thing is made equal and indifferent. Nevertheless, when

I contemplate, added he, every thing that now occurs to me, I can hardly believe it will be possible for me to be so insensible after death, as is generally believ'd. This I was thinking upon when you came in. 'Tis a mortal pain to me, when I consider the condition I shall now leave you in; languishing, oppress'd with grief, and depriv'd of the consolation you was always sure of meeting with in a brother, who lov'd you with the utmost tenderness; I must also leave my dear wife and dear child in the same sad state. Gracious creator! shall I be at rest in thy bosom, after having pass'd thro' such a series of misfortunes?

ALTHO' I saw but too plainly, that his death was at hand, I yet thought proper to cheer him up, and to feed him with the hopes, that as he was of so good a constitution, he very probably might recover; and tho' I myself was in the deepest affliction, I yet endeavour'd to assume an undisturb'd air, in order to encourage him. However the struggles I made to suppress my sighs were so violent; that I felt more than once that kind of horror which I fancy the soul must be struck with, at the instant of its separation from the body. Nevertheless,  
after

after I had consider'd a moment, that it was absolutely necessarily I should, for my brother's, his wife's, my children and my own sake, preserve a presence of mind, and not appear disturb'd; I by that means found strength of mind sufficient, to suspend the effects of the strongest despair. I wou'd not have my readers imagine, that in giving this account of my vigour and resolution, I am prompted to it from a fondness of that empty shadow call'd fame; and in order to engage the esteem of those who peruse these sheets. Alas! If I have not declar'd it enough, I will again repeat it, that I only desire their compassion.

THE surgeon of the ship, whom I drew aside, and begg'd to tell me sincerely what he thought of the wound, declar'd that it was mortal; and that he was surpriz'd how it was possible for him to survive it so long. His intestines, says he, are cut, so that he now lives no otherwise than by a miracle. Alas! after hearing this, I went up again to my unhappy brother; who anticipated what I was going to propose, by desiring very earnestly that his wife and daughter might be sent for. This request appear'd so just, and I was so much afraid lest he should be  
depriv'd



depriv'd of the consolation of embracing them for the last time, that I left him instantly, in order to go and prepare my sister for this sad interview. The sailors, as I pass'd by, desir'd we might set sail that night; for fear, in case we should stay till next morning, of being seiz'd by the *Spaniards*. Accordingly, I agreed to weigh anchor; which being done, I ran to my sister, and told her that it would be necessary for her to arm herself with courage, since she must now see her husband in a condition she little expected to find him in. However, this short absence bereav'd me of the satisfaction of bidding my brother a last adieu; for he expir'd before I return'd back into his cabin, that is, not above three or four minutes after I had left it.

How strong soever the habit might be which I had contracted, of abstracting, as I have already observ'd, all my misfortunes from their circumstances, in order to consider them merely in themselves; I must confess that I was prodigiously affected with this sudden turn of fate; which seem'd to have taken me but for an instant from my brother, purely to take that opportunity of snatching him away. I scarce had spoke twenty  
words

words to him, after I was told of his being wounded. A thousand tender sensations, which grief and friendship rais'd confusedly in my heart, were pent up, as it were, in it, and cou'd not find a vent. I had put a constraint upon myself before him, in order to cheer his spirits; and I was forc'd to commit a greater violence upon myself, in order to encourage my sister the more by my example. I was coming out of the cabin with them, when I was met by a servant, who told me with tears in his eyes that 'twas too late; for oh! Sir, says he, my master's dead. My sister and niece heard these words; but it wou'd be impossible to describe their moan, their tears, and the haste with which they ran forwards. However, by the assistance of some of the sailors, I brought 'em back, and forc'd 'em into my cabin, where I left them with Mrs. *Lallin*, and their women, whom I begg'd to comfort them so well as they could. Having said this, I withdrew to a cabin; where I deliver'd myself up to that kind of grief which is the most deadly poison of the soul, because 'tis wholly pent up, and by that means intoxicates, as it were, all the faculties.

NEVER-

NEVERTHELESS, after having spent some time in this desponding manner, I cou'd not refuse to answer some of my servants, who came running into the cabin, and desir'd to speak to me. *Dring* who was more familiar with me than any of my servants, told me with dread in his countenance, that the sailors saw a dreadful spectacle at sea; and that it it would be proper I should take a view of it. Hearing this I got upon deck, when I found it very dark, by which means I discover'd but more plainly, what I was brought to see. 'Twas a globe of fire which seem'd to be at a pretty distance off, and which flam'd afterwards with surprizing activity. After having reflected some time, without being able to guess what cou'd possibly feed it, in the midst of the ocean; I at last concluded that 'twas a ship on fire, and consequently those aboard her must be in the utmost danger. I immediately gave orders for our sailing up to her, in order to assist the unhappy people on board her. I even order'd several guns to be fir'd, and had several torches light-ed, in order to give them notice of our approach. This prov'd of service; for a moment or two after we saw two boats rowing

rowing towards us, in each of which were near fifteen or sixteen persons, who held out their arms to us; and besought us in the most plaintive manner, to take them on board our ship, which I immediately granted. Being got in, they told me their whole misfortune. Their ship indeed was burning, and they narrowly escap'd perishing in the flames. They were *Frenchmen* who had been in *Martinico*, and were returning to *Nantz* in *Brittany*, where most of them were born. I gave orders that they should be treated with the utmost humanity. They then ask'd me whither I was bound; a question I cou'd hardly answer them. We were now not far from the coast of *Spain*. Notwithstanding my deep grief, and the idea of my dead brother which was present to my mind; I yet could not but think of my wife's being in *Corunna*; and that I possibly might easily get her seiz'd at that place. The perplexity which she plung'd me into, tortur'd me inexpressibly, and I was some time before I knew what resolution to take. I blush'd to think that I should have the least love for her. I sigh'd, and call'd upon heaven to be witness of the pangs I felt; but then I cou'd not resolve with myself

myself to leave a place in which I had great reason to believe she was. Nevertheless, as the last words which ever my brother spoke, presented themselves to my imagination in their utmost force, I was so ashamed when I reflected on my own weakness, that I took a resolution at once. Let us, says I to the sailors, crowd all the sail we can, and remove from this unhappy coast; let us go for *Nantz*, since humanity obliges me to carry these unfortunate persons thither, as I have taken them in. That is our course in case we sail for *England*; however, 'tis indifferent to me, in what part of the world I end my unhappy life— Altho' I form'd this resolution when my spirits were confus'd, I yet was more and more confirm'd in it afterwards.

As we met with contrary winds, it consequently made the voyage entirely tiresome; and as for my own part, I was so vastly dejected, that I was even incapable, almost, of forming the least reflection. Among those I had taken into my ship, were some *French* gentlemen of merit, who hearing of my sufferings, offer'd me their company, in order to divert my melancholly a little. I thank'd them, and desir'd they would indulge that



that favour to my sister. This they did, and with so much politeness and good sense, that their endeavours were not altogether ineffectual. With regard to my own self, who was equally incapable of desiring or receiving consolation, I shut myself up every day in my cabin, and would not allow access to a single person. I had no book with me. I had always look'd upon those which I had in *America* as very trifling; and tho' they had serv'd me for an idle amusement during some time, I yet almost despis'd them; so that as I suppos'd our voyage would not take up so much time as it did, I had neglected to take any with me from the *Havana*. I therefore had no other remedy against the poison which prey'd upon my vitals, but the invisible assistance of heaven, and the vigour of my constitution.

At last, we arriv'd at *Nantz*; the kind office I had done to the inhabitants of that city, by taking their distress'd countrymen on board, soon gain'd me their esteem and friendship. Immediately refreshments of every sort were offer'd me; however, I soon declar'd that I should look upon it as a favour if they would not importune me, and that the

T

greatest

greatest pleasure they cou'd do me, would be to leave me to my reflections. I spent the first days in preparing my brother's funeral, which was solemniz'd in a most honourable manner. Alas! how greatly did I envy him, now he was going to enjoy eternal peace, in the quiet mansion of the grave.

THE unhappy condition to which most of the *French* whom I had brought along with me, were reduc'd, by the loss of their ship; inspir'd me with a resolution which I immediately executed, with the applause and admiration of all the inhabitants of *Nantz*: and this was, to make them a present of my own vessel. I was now very wealthy, but then I wholly disregarded riches, and was naturally very compassionate; so that in doing them this service I oblig'd myself. However, 'twas look'd upon by all as an unparallel'd piece of generosity. I was not oblig'd to go immediately for *England*, and this I cou'd do at any time very easily. I also rewarded very liberally the sailors whom I had brought with me from the *Havana*; and kept only six servants, besides Mrs. *Lallin*'s and my sister's waiting-women.

F I N I S.



